C. Baker.

A

# Philosophical Enquiry

INTO THE

ORIGIN of our IDEAS

OF THE

## SUBLIME

AND

### BEAUTIFUL.

THE FOURTH EDITION.

With an Introductory Discourse concerning

To which is added.

A VINDICATION of NATURAL SOCIETY, after the Manner of a late Noble Writer, by the same Author.

#### DUBLIN:

Printed by and for SARAH COTTER, under Dick's Coffee-house in Skinner-Row. M;DCC,LXVI 

TO A ST ST

ing a least of the Carlo and the Mills

etan zilekside o

A THE RESERVE OF THE PARTY OF T

THO A HAR

#### PREFACE.

I Have endeavoured to make this edition Something more full and Satisfactory than the first. I have fought with the utmost care, and read with equal attention, every thing robich has appeared in public against my opinions; I bave taken advantage of the candid liberty of my Friends; and if by these means I bave been better enabled to discover the imperfections of the work, the indulgence it has received, imperfect as it was, furnished me with a new motive to spare no reasonable pains for its improvement. Though I have not found sufficient reason, or what appeared to me sufficient, for making any material change in my theory, I have found it necessary in many places to explain, illustrate and enforce it. I have prefixed an introductory difcourse concerning Taste; it is a matter curious in itself; and it leads naturally enough to the principal enquiry. This with the other explanations has made the work confiderably larger; and by increasing its bulk bas, I am afraid added to its faults; so that notwithstanding all my attention, it may stand in need of a

yet greater share of indulgence than it requi-

red at its first appearance.

They who are accustomed to studies of this nature will expect, and they will allow too for many faults. They know that many of the objects of our enquiry are in themselves obscure and intricate; and that many others bave been rendered so by affected refinements. or false learning; they know that there are many impediments in the Subject, in the prejudice of others, and even in our own, that render it a matter of no small difficulty to show in a clear light the genuine face of nature. They know that whilft the mind is intent on the general scheme of things, some particular parts must be negletted; that we must often submit the style to the matter, and frequently give up the praise of elegance, satisfied with being clear.

The characters of nature are legible it is true; but they are not plain enough to enable those who run, to read them. We must make use of cautious, I had almost said, a timorous method of proceeding. We must not attempt to fly, when we can scarcely pretend to creep. In considering any complex matter, we ought to examine every distinct ingredient in the composition, one by one; and reduce every thing

our nature binds us to a strict law and very narrow limits. We ought afterwards to re-examine the principles by the effect of the composition, as well as the composition by that of the principles. We ought to compare our subject with things of a similar nature, and even with things of a contrary nature; for discoveries may be, and often are made by the contrast, which would escape us on the single view. The greater number of these comparisons we make, the more general and the more certain our knowledge is like to prove, as built upon a more extensive and perfect induction.

If an enquiry thus carefully conducted, should fail at last of discovering the truth, it may answer an end perhaps as useful, in discovering to us the weakness of our own understanding. If it does not make us knowing, it may make us modest. If it does not preserve us from error, it may at least from the spirit of error, and may make us cautious of prenouncing with positiveness or with haste, when so much labour may end in so much uncertainty.

I could wish that in examining this theory,

A 3 the

the same method were pursued which I endeavoured to observe in forming it. The objections, in my opinion, ought to be proposed, either to the several principles as they are distinally considered, or to the justness of the conclusion which is drawn from them. But it is common to pass over both the premisses and conclusion in silence, and to produce as an objection, some poetical passage which does not seem easily accounted for upon the principles I endeavour to establish. This manner of proseeding I should think very improper. The task would be infinite, if we could establish no principle until we bad previously unravelled the complex texture of every image or description to be found in poets and orators. And tho' we should never be able to reconcile the effect of such images to our principles, this can never overturn the theory itself, whilst it is founded on certain and indisputable facts. A theory founded on experience and not assumed, is always good for so much as it explains. Our inability to push it indefinitely is no argument at all against it. This inability may be owing to our ignorance of some necessary mediums; to a want of proper application; to many other saufes besides a desect in the principles we employ

ploy. In reality the subject requires a much closer attention, than we dare claim from our manner of treating it.

If it should not appear on the face of the work, I must caution the reader against imagining that I intended a full dissertation on the Sublime and Beautiful. My enquiry went no further than to the origin of these ideas. If the qualities which I have ranged under the bead of the Sublime be all found confiftent with each other, and all different from those which I place under the head of Beauty; and if those which compose the class of the Beautiful bave the same confistency with themselves, and the same opposition to those which are classed under the denomination of Sublime, I am in little pain whether any body chuses to follow the name I give them or not, provided be allows that what I dispose under different beads are in reality different things in nature. The use I make of the words may be blamed as too confined or too extended; my meaning cannot well be misunderstood.

To conclude; whatever progress may be made towards the discovery of truth in this matter, I do not repent the pains I have taken in it. The use of such enquiries may be very

considerable. Whatever turns the foul inward on itself, tends to concenter its forces, and to fit it for greater and stronger flights of science. By looking into physical causes our minds are opened and enlarged; and in this pursuit whether we take or whether we. lose our game, the chace is certainly of fervice. Cicero, true as be was to the Academic philosophy, and consequently led to reject. the certainty of physical as of every other kind of knowledge, yet freely confesses its great importance to the human understanding: " Est " animorum ingeniorumque nostrorum na-"turale quoddam quasi pabulum conside-" ratio contemplatioque natura." If we can direct the lights we derive from such exalted speculations, upon the bumbler field of the imagination, whilft we investigate the springs and trace the courses of our passions, we may not only communicate to the tafte a fort of philosophical solidity, but we may reflett back on the severer sciences some of the graces and elegancies of taste, without which the greatest proficiency in those sciences will always have the appearance of something illiberal.

#### THE

# CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION. On Tafte Page 1

#### PART. I

SECT. I. Novelty.	35
SECT. II. Pain and Pleasure	37
SECT. III. The difference be	tween
the removal of Pain and politive	plea-
fure	40
SECT. IV. Of Delight and Ple	afure,
as opposed to each other	43
SECT. V. Joy and Grief	46
SECT. VI. Of the Passions which	h be-
는 가면 하는 경기를 가는 나는 이 등 보고 있는 그들이 되지 않는 것은 사이를 잃었다면 하는 것이 없어 없었다.	48
	CT.
: 10 to 5 to 7	

CONTENTS.	
SECT. VII. Of the fublime	49
SECT. VIII. Of the Passions wi	nich
belong to fociety.	51
SECT. IX. The final cause of	
difference between the Passions belo	ng-
ing to Self-preservation, and those wl	
regard the Society of the Sexes	53
SECT. X. Of Beauty	55
SECT. XI. Society and Solitude	57
SECT. XII. Sympathy, Imitation	
Ambition .	58
SECT. XIII. Sympathy	59
SECT. XIV. The effects of Syn	
thy in the diffresses of others	60
SECT. XV. Of the effects of Trag	edy
	63 :
S'E C T. XVI. Imitation	66
SECT. XVII. Ambition	69
SECT. XVIII. Recapitulation	71
SECT. XIX. The Conclusion.	73
C to the contract of the contr	
PIAOR IT ILL	

SECT. I. Of the paffior	caused by the
Sublime	79
SECT. II. Terror	80
The Rolling Co.	SECT.

SECT. III. Obscurity	.82
SECT. IV. Of the difference bet	
Clearness and Obscurity with rega	AND CARROLL IN
the Passions	84
SECT. [IV.] the same subject	
nued	85
	91
	103
2. 不是更要重要的是例如此是要是特別的可以可以使用的可能力。如何可以可能的可能的可能的可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可以可	104
SECT. VIII. Infinity	106
SECT. IX. Succession and Unifo	
than the tens appropriate that the class	108
SECT. X. Magnitude in Building	
SECT. XI. Infinity in pleasing C	
To blues son son standed AV AV	113
SECT. XII. Difficulty	114
SECT. XIII. Magnificence	113
SECT. XIV. Light	118
SECT. XV. Light in Building	120
SECT. XVI. Colour confide	red as
productive of the Sublime	122
SECT. XVII. Sound and Loudn	
SECT. XVIII. Suddenness	
SECT. XIX. Intermitting	
SECT. XX. The Cries of anim	A SEC SECRET VICE STORES OF
SECT. XXI. Smell and Taft	
ALL ALL	tere

ters and Stenches

SECT. AMI. Feeling. Fain	130
PART III.	
CRCT I OCR	
SECT. I. Of Beauty	132
SECT. II. Proportion not the ca	The Tale Man
Beauty in Vegetables	134
SECT. III. Proportion not the	cause
of Beauty in Animals	140
SECT. IV. Proportion not the	
of Beauty in the human species	
SECT. V. Proportion further	
dered dered like in the like it	153
SECT. VI. Fitness not the car	193
	* * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * * *
Beauty True And Andrews	157
SECT. VII. The real effects of F	
011	162
SECT. VIH. The recapitulation	
SECT. IX. Perfection not the	cause
of Beauty emilded out to avidubo	
SECT. X. How far the ideas of	Beau-
ty may be applied to the qualities	of the
O T. XIX. Intermitting boil as	168
SECT. XI. How far the ideas of	Beau-
ty may be applied to Virtue	
SE SE	CT.
	•

## GONTENTS.

CONTENTS
SECT. XII. The real cause of Beauty
SECT. XIII. Beautiful objects small
SECT. XIII. Beautiful objects small
SECT. XIV. Smoothness 774
SECT. XIV. Smoothnels 774.
SEC1. XV. Gradual Variation 176
SECT. XVI. Delicacy 178
SECT. XVII. Beauty in Colour 180
SECT. XVIII. Recapitulation 181.
SECT. XIX. The Philiognomy 182.
SECT. XX. The Eye
SECT. XXI. Ugliness 184 SECT. XXII. Grace 185
SECT. XXIII. Elegance and Speci-
oulnels SECT. XXIV. The Beautiful in Feel-
Ol Billiphia Arra Circa vice a compare
SECT. XXV. The Beautiful in Sounds
190
S.E.C.T. XXVI. Tafte and Smell 193
SECT XXVII. The Sublime and Beau-
tiful compared is a specific larity 194
and the second s
cercing darkness confidence with 225
222. Daleyming countries.
S'E C T. I. Of the efficient cause of the
Sublime and Beautiful 1 2 1 1 197
ADES . SECT.

SECT. II.	Affociation 200
SECT. III.	Cause of Pain and Fear
Status at a fine	201.
SECT. IV.	Continued 204
	How the Sublime is pro-
duced	206.
SECT. VI.	How Pain can be a cause
of Delight	207
SECT. VII.	Exercise necessary for the
finer organs	200
	. Why things, not danger-
	nes produce a passion like
Terror.	211
SECT. IX.	Why visual objects, of
	ions, are Sublime ibid.
	Unity why requisite to
Vaftness	213-
	The artificial Infinite 216
	The vibrations must be
fimilar	218
	. The effects of Succession.
in vifual obje	The second secon
	Locke's opinion con-
	ness considered 223
	Darkness terrible in its
TE TANK OF BUT	SECT.
The second secon	

CONTENT.	
SECT. XVI. Why darkness i	s terri-
ble.	2275
SECT. XVII. The effects of Bla	
	233
SECT. XVIII. The effects of	Black-
ness moderated.	233:
SECT. XIX. The physical c	ause of
- Love	234:
SECT. XX. Why Smoothness	is beau-
tiful:	237
SECT. XXI. Sweetness, its natu	re 238
SECT. XXII. Sweetness relaxin	g . 242
SECT. XXIII. Variation, why	
tiful	
	244
SECT. XXIV. Concerning St	nalineis
All Property and the second	247
SECT, XXV. Of Colour.	252

## PARTIV

SECT.I.	Of Words	255
SECT. IL	The common effect	t of Poe-
	railing ideas of thing	
SECT. III	General words before	ore ideas
7 79 99 99	Lineal academic	460
SECT. I	7. The effect of wor	ds 262
Witness of the Contract of the	Ave. It is a second of	# DAG THE

SECT. V.	Examples that words	may
affect withou	out raising images	264
SECT. VI.	Poetry not firially an	imi-
tative art		273
SECT. VII	How Words influen	ce the
Passions:	in a demand on	274

SQ F. R. Col. Words
SECT. II. The common effect of Forry, not by raifing ideas of things. 250
SECT. III. General words before a 260
as ECT. IV. The effect of words. 262
SECT. IV. The effect of words. 262

#### INTRODUCTION.

ON

## T A S T E.

ON a superficial view, we may seem to differ very widely from each other in our reasonings, and no less in our pleasures: but notwithstanding this difference, which I think to be rather apparent than real, it is probable that the Standard both of reason and Tafte is the same in all human creatures. For if there were not some principles of judgment as well as of fentiment common to all mankind, no hold could possibly be taken either on their reason or their passions, sufficient to maintain the ordinary correspondence of life. It appears indeed to be generally acknowledged, that with regard to truth and fallhood there is fomething fixed. We find people in their disputes continually appealing to certain tefts and ftandards which are allowed on all fides, and are supposed to be established in

B

our common nature. But there is not the same obvious concurrence in any uniform or fettled principles which relate to Tafte. It is even commonly supposed that this delicate and aerial faculty, which feems too volatile to endure even the chains of a definition, cannot be properly tried by any test, nor regulated by any standard. There is fo continual a call for the exercise of the reasoning faculty, and it is so much strengthened by perpetual contention, that certain maxims of right reason seem to be tacitly fettled amongst the most ignorant. The learned have improved on this rude science. and reduced their maxims into a system. If Tafte has not been so happily cultivated. it was not that the subject was barren, but that the labourers were few or negligent: for to fay the truth, there are not the fame interesting motives to impel us to fix the one, which urge us to afcertain the other, And after all, if men differ in their opinion concerning fuch matters, their difference is not attended with the fame important confequences, else I make no doubt but that the logic of Taste, if I may be allowed the expression, might very possibly be as well digested,

digested, and we might come to discuss matters of this nature with as much certainty, as those which seem more immediately within the province of mere reason. And indeed it is very necessary at the entrance into such an enquiry, as our present, to make this point as clear as possible; for if Taste has no fixed principles, if the imagination is not affected according to some invariable and certain laws, our labour is like to be employed to very little purpose; as it must be judged an useless, if not an absurd undertaking, to lay down rules for caprice, and to set up for a legislator of whims and fancies.

The term Taste, like all other figurative terms, is not extremely accurate: the thing which we understand by it, is far from a simple and determinate idea in the minds of most men, and it is therefore liable to uncertainty and consustion. I have no great opinion of a definition, the celebrated remedy for the cure of this disorder. For when we define, we seem in danger of circumscribing nature within the bounds of our own notions, which we often take up by hazard, or embrace on trust, or form

#### INTRODUCTION.

out of a limited and partial consideration of the object before us, instead of extending our ideas to take in all that nature comprehends, according to her manner of combining. We are limited in our enquiry by the strict laws to which we have submitted at our setting out.

-Circa vilem patulumque morabimur orbem Unde pudor proferre pedem vetat aut operis lex.

A definition may be very exact, and yet go but a very little way towards informing us of the nature of the thing defined; but let the virtue of a definition be what it will, in the order of things, it feems rather to follow than to precede our enquiry, of which it ought to be confidered as the refult. It must be acknowledged that the methods of disquisition and teaching may be fometimes different, and on very good reason undoubtedly; but for my part, I am convinced that the method of teaching which approaches most nearly to the method of investigation, is incomparably the best: fince not content with ferving up'a few barren and lifeless truths, it leads to the flock on which they grew; it tends to fet the reader himself in the track of invention,

tion, and to direct him into those paths in which the author has made his own discoveries, if he should be so happy as to have made any that are valuable.

But to cut off all pretence for cavilling, I mean by the word, Tafte, no more than that faculty, or those faculties, of the mind which are affected with, or which form a judgment of the works of imagination and the elegant arts. This is, I think, the most general idea of that word, and what is the leaft connected with any particular theory. And my point in this enquiry is to find whether there are any principles on which the imagination is affected, so common to all, so grounded and certain, as to supply the means of reasoning satisfactorily about them. And fuch principles of Tafte, I fancy there are; however paradoxical it may feem to those, who, on a superficial view, imagine that there is so great a diversity of Tastes both in kind and degree, that nothing can be more indeterminate.

All the natural powers in man, which I know, that are conversant about external objects, are the Senses; the Imagination; and the Judgment. And first with regard

to the Senses. We do and we must suppose, that as the conformation of their organs are nearly, or altogether the fame in all men, fo the manner of perceiving external objects is in all men the same, or with little difference. We are satisfied that what appears to be light to one eye, appears light to another; that what feems fweet to one palate, is fweet to another; that what is dark and bitter to this man, islikewise dark and bitter to that; and we conclude in the same manner of great and little, hard and foft, hot and cold, rough and smooth; and indeed of all the natural qualities and affections of bodies. If we fuffer ourselves to imagine, that their senses present to different men different images of things, this sceptical proceeding will make every fort of reasoning on every subject vain and frivolous, even that sceptical reafoning itself, which had persuaded us to entertain a doubt concerning the agreement of our perceptions. But as there will be very little doubt that bodies present similar images to the whole species, it must necesfarily be allowed, that the pleasures and the pains which every object excites in one man,

man, it must raise in all mankind, whilst it operates naturally, fimply, and by its proper powers only; for if we deny this, we must imagine, that the same cause operating in the same manner, and on subjects of the fame kind, will produce different effects, which would be highly abfurd. Let us first consider this point in the sense of Taste, and the rather as the faculty in question has taken its name from that sense. All men are agreed to call vinegar four, honey fweet, and aloes bitter; and as they are all agreed in finding these qualities in these objects, they do not in the least differ concerning their effects with regard to pleasure and pain. They all concur in calling fweetness pleas fant, and fourness and bitterness unpleasant, Here there is no diverfity in their fentiments; and that there is not, appears fully from the consent of all men in the metaphors which are taken from the sense of Taste. A sour temper, bitter expressions, bitter curses, a bitter fate, are terms well and strongly understood by all. And we are altogether as well understood when we say, a sweet disposition, a sweet person, a sweet condi-BA tion

tion and the like. It is confessed, that custom, and some other causes, have made many deviations from the natural pleasures or pains which belong to these several Tastes: but then the power of diftinguishing between the natural and acquired relish remains to the very last. A man frequently comes to prefer the Tafte of tobacco to that of fugar, and the flavour of vinegar to that of milk; but this makes no confusion in Taste, whilst he is sensible that the tobacco and vinegar are not sweet, and whilst he knows that habit alone has reconciled his palate to these alien pleasures. Even with fuch a person we may speak, and with sufficient precision, concerning Tastes. But should any man be found who declares, that to him tobacco has a Tafte like fugar, and that he cannot diftinguish between milk and vinegar; or that tobacco and vinegar are fweet, milk bitter, and fugar four, we immediately conclude that the organs of this man are out of order, and that his palate is utterly vitiated. We are as far from conferring with such a person about Tastes, as from reasoning concerning the relations of quantity

tity with one who should deny that all the parts together were equal to the whole. We do not call a man of this kind wrong in his notions, but absolutely mad. Exceptions of this fort in either way, do not at all impeach our general rule, nor make us conclude that men have various principles concerning the relations of quantity, or the Tafte of things. So that when it is faid, Taste cannot be disputed, it can only mean, that no one can strictly answer what pleasure or pain some particular men may find from the Tafte of some particular thing. This indeed cannot be disputed; but we may dispute, and with fufficient clearness too, concerning the things which are naturally pleafing or difagreeable to the sense. But when we talk of any peculiar or acquired relish, then we must know the habits, the prejudices, or the diftempers of this particular man, and we must draw our conclusion from those.

This agreement of mankind is not confined to the Taste solely. The principle of pleasure derived from sight is the same in all. Light is more pleasing than darkness. Summer, when the earth is clad in green,

B 5

when the heavens are serene and bright, is more agreeable than winter, when every thing makes a different appearance. I never remember that any thing beautiful, whether a man, a beaft, a bird, or a plant, was ever shewn though it were to a hundred people, that they did not all immediately agree that it was beautiful, though some might have thought that it fell short of their expectation, or that other things were still finer. I believe no man thinks a goose to be more beautiful than a swan, or imagines that what they call a Friezland hen excels a peacock. It must be observed too, that the pleasures of the fight are not near fo complicated, and confused, and altered by unnatural habits and affociations, as the pleasures of the Taste are; because the pleasures of the fight more commonly acquiesce in themselves; and are not so often altered by confiderations which are independent of the fight itself. But things do not spontaneously present themselves to the palate as they do to the fight; they are generally applied to it, either as food or as medicine; and from the qualities which they

they possess for nutritive or medicinal purpoles, they often form the palate by degrees, and by force of these associations. Thus opium is pleafing to Turks, on account of the agreeable delirium it produces. Tobacco is the delight of Dutchmen, as it diffuses a torpor and pleasing stupefaction. Fermented spirits pleaseour common people, because they banish care, and all consideration of future or present evils. All of these would lie absolutely neglected if their properties had originally gone no further than the Tafte; but all of those, together with tea and coffee, and some other things, have paft from the apothecary's shop to our tables, and were taken for health long before they were thought of for pleasure. The effect of the drug has made us use it frequently; and frequent use, combined with the agreeable effect, has made the Tafte itfelf at last agreeable. But this does not in the least perplex our reasoning; because we diftinguish to the last the acquired from the natural relish. In describing the Taste of an unknown fruit, you would scarcely fay, that it had a sweet and pleasant flavour like tobacco,

tobacco, opium, or garlic, although you fpoke to those who were in the constant use of those drugs, and had great pleasure in them. There is in all men a sufficient remembrance of the original natural causes of pleasure, to enable them to bring all things offered to their fenses to that standard, and to regulate their feelings and opinions by it. Suppose one who had so vitiated his palate as to take more pleasure in the Taste of opium than in that of butter or honey, to be presented with a bolus of fquills; there is hardly any doubt but that he would prefer the butter or honey to this nauseous morsel, or to any other bitter drug to which he had not been accustomed; which proves that his palate was naturally like that of other men in all things, that it is still like the palate of other men in many things, and only vitiated in some particular points. For in judging of any new thing, even of a Taste similar to that which he has been formed by habit to like, he finds his palate affected in the natural manner, and on the common principles. Thus the pleasure of all the senses, of the sight, and

and even of the Taste, that most ambiguous of the senses, is the same in all, high and low, searned and unlearned.

Besides the ideas, with their annexed pains and pleasures, which are presented by the fense; the mind of man possesses a fort of creative power of its own; either in representing at pleasure the images of things in the order and manner in which they were received by the fenfes, or in combining those images in a new manner, and according to a different order. This power is called Imagination; and to this belongs whatever is called wit, fancy, invention, and the like. But it must be observed, that this power of the imagination is incapable of producing any thing absolutely new; it can only vary the disposition of those ideas which it has received from the fenses. Now the imagination is the most extensive province of pleasure and pain, as it is the region of our fears and our hopes, and of all our passions that are connected with them; and whatever is calculated to affect the imagination with these commanding ideas, by force of any original natural im-

#### 14 INTRODUCTION.

impression, must have the same power pretty equally over all men. For since the imagination is only the representative of the senses, it can only be pleased or displeased with the images, from the same principle on which the sense is pleased or displeased with the realities; and consequently there must be just as close an agreement in the imaginations as in the senses of men. A little attention will convince us that this must of necessity be the case.

But in the imagination, besides the pain or pleasure arising from the properties of the natural object, a pleasure is perceived from the refemblance, which the imitation has to the original; the imagination, I conceive, can have no pleasure but what results from one or other of these causes. And these causes operate pretty uniformly upon all men, because they operate by principles in nature, and which are not derived from any particular habits or advantages. Mr. Locke very justly and finely observes of wit, that it is chiefly conversant in tracing refemblances; he remarks at the fame time, that the buliness of judgment is rather in finding

finding differences. It may perhaps appear, on this supposition, that there is no . material diffinction between the wit and the judgment, as they both feem to refult from different operations of the same faculty of comparing. But in reality, whether they are or are not dependent on the same. power of the mind, they differ so very materially in many respects, that a perfect union of wit and judgment is one of the rarest things in the world. When two diftinct objects are unlike to each other, it is only what we expect; things are in their common way; and therefore they make no impression on the imagination: but when two distinct objects have a resemblance, we are struck, we attend to them, and we are pleased. The mind of man has naturally a far greater alacrity and fatisfaction in tracing refemblances than in fearthing for differences; because by making resemblances we produce new images, we unite, we create, we enlarge our flock; but in making distinctions we offer no food at all to the imagination; the talk itself is more severe and irksome, and what pleasure we derive from

from it is something of a negative and indirect nature. A piece of news is told me in the morning; this, merely as a piece of news, as a fact added to my stock, gives me fome pleasure. In the evening I find there was nothing in it. What do I gain by this, but the diffatisfaction to find that I had been imposed upon? Hence it is, that men are much more naturally inclined to belief than to incredulity. And it is upon this principle, that the most ignorant and barbarous nations have frequently excelled in fimilitude, comparisons, metaphors, and allegories, who have been weak and backward in diftinguishing and forting their ideas. And it is for a reason of this kind that Homer and the oriental writers, tho' very fond of fimilitudes, and though they often strike out such as are truly admirable, they seldom take care to have them exact; that is, they are taken with the general refemblance, they paint it strongly, and they take no notice of the difference which may be found between the things compared.

Now as the pleasure of resemblance is that which principally flatters the imagination, all men are nearly equal in this point, as far as their knowledge of the things represented or compared extends. The principle of this knowledge is very much accidental, as it depends upon experience and observation, and not on the strength or weakness of any natural faculty; and it is from this difference in knowledge that what we commonly, though with no great exactness, call a difference in Tafte proceeds. A man to whom sculpture is new, sees a barber's block, or some ordinary piece of statuary; he is immediately struck and pleased, because he sees something like an human figure; and entirely taken up with this likenels, he does not at all attend to its defects; No person, I believe, at the first time of feeing a piece of imitation ever did. Some time after, we suppose that this novice lights upon a more artificial work of the fame nature; he now begins to look with contempt on what he admired at first; not. that he admired it even then for its unlikeness to a man, but for that general though inaccurate resemblance which it bore to the human figure. What he admired at different times in these so different figures;

is strictly the same; and though his knowledge is improved, his Tafte is not altered. Hitherto his mistake was from a want of knowledge in art, and this arose from his inexperience; but he may be still deficient from a want of knowledge in nature. it is possible that the man in question may stop here, and that the master piece of a great hand may please him no more than the middling performance of a vulgar artift; and this not for want of better or higher relish, but because all men do not observe with sufficient accuracy on the human figure, to enable them to judge properly of an imitation of it. And that the critical Taste does not depend upon a superisor principle in men, but upon superior knowledge, may appear from several instances. The story of the antient painter and the shoemaker is very well known. The shoemaker fet the painter right with regard to fome mistakes he had made in the shoe of one of his figures, and which the painter, who had not made fuch accurate observations on shoes, and was content with a general resemblance, had never observed. But this

this was no impeachment to the Tafte of the painter, it only shewed some want of knowledge in the art of making shoes. Let us imagine, that an anatomist had come into the painter's working room. His piece is in general well done, the figure in queftion in a good attitude, and the parts well adjusted to their various movements; yet the anatomist, critical in his art, may obferve the swell of some muscle not quite just in the peculiar action of the figure. Here the anatomist observes what the painter had not observed, and he passes by what the shoemaker had remarked. But a want of the last critical knowledge in anatomy no more reflected on the natural good Tafte of the painter, or of any common observer of his piece, than the want of an exact knowledge in the formation of a shoe. A fine piece of a decollated head of St. John the Baptist was shewn to a Turkish emperor; he praised many things, but he observed one defect; he observed that the skin did not shrink from the wounded part of the neck. The fultan on this occasion, though his observation was very just, discovered no more -

more natural Tafte than the painter who executed this piece, or than a thousand European connoisseurs who probably never would have made the same observation. His Turkish majesty had indeed been well acquainted with that terrible spectacle, which the others could only have represented in their imagination. On the subject of their dislike there is a difference between all these people, arising from the different kinds and degrees of their knowledge; but there is something in common to the paint. er, the shoemaker, the anatomist, and the Turkish emperor, the pleasure arising from a natural object, fo far as each perceives it justly imitated; the satisfaction in seeing an agreeable figure; the sympathy proceeding from a striking and affecting incident. So far as Taste is natural, it is nearly common to all.

In poetry, and other pieces of imagination, the same parity may be observed. It is true, that one man is charmed with Don Bellianis, and reads Virgil coldly; whilst another is transported with the Æneid, and leaves Don Bellianis to children. These ent from each other; but in fact they differ very little. In both these pieces, which inspire such opposite sentiments, a tale exciting admiration is told; both are full of action, both are passionate, in both are voyages, battles, triumphs, and continual changes of fortune. The admirer of Don Bellianis perhaps does not understand the residual language of the Æneid, who, if it was degraded into the style of the Pilgrim's Progress, might feel in all its energy, on the same principle which made him an admirer of Don Bellianis.

In his favourite author he is not shocked with the continual breaches of probability, the confusion of times, the offences against manners, the trampling upon geography; for he knows nothing of geography and chronology, and he has never examined the grounds of probability. He perhaps reads of a shipwreck on the coast of Bohemia; wholly taken up with so interesting an event, and only sollicitous for the sate of his hero, he is not in the least troubled at this extravagant blunder. For why should he

be shocked at a shipwreck on the coast of Bohemia, who does not know but that Bohemia may be an island in the Atlantic ocean? and after all, what reflection is this on the natural good Tafte of the person

here supposed?

So far then as Tafte belongs to the imagination, its principle is the same in all men; there is no difference in the manner of their being affected, nor in the causes of the affection; but in the degree there is a · difference, which arises from two causes principally; either from a greater degree of natural fenfibility, or from a closer and longer attention to the object. To illustrate this by the procedure of the fenses in which the same difference is found, let us suppose a very smooth marble table to be fet before two men: they both perceive it to be smooth, and they are both pleased with it, because of this quality. So far they agree. But suppose another, and after that another table, the latter still smoother than the former to be fet before them. It is now very probable that these men, who are so agreed upon what is smooth, and in the pleasure

pleasure from thence, will disagree when they come to fettle which table has the advantage in point of polish. Here is indeed the great difference between Tastes, when men come to compare the excess or diminution of things which are judged by degree and not by measure. Nor is it easy, when such a difference arises, to settle the point, if the excess or diminution be not glaring. If we differ in opinion about two quantities, we can have recourse to a common measure, which may decide the question with the utmost exactness; and this I take it is what gives mathematical knowledge a greater certainty than any other. But in things whose excess is not judged by greater or smaller, as smoothness and roughness, hardness and softness, darkness and light, the shades of colours, all these are very eafily diftinguished when the difference is any way considerable, but not when it is minute, for want of some common measures which perhaps may never come to be discovered. In these nice cases, supposing the acuteness of the sense equal, the greater attention and habit in fuch things,

things will have the advantage. In the question about the tables, the marble polisher will unquestionably determine the most accurately. But notwithstanding this want of a common measure for fettling many disputes relative to the senses and their representative the imagination, we find that the principles are the same in all, and that there is no disagreement until we come to examine into the preeminence or difference of things, which bring us within the

province of the judgment.

So long as we are conversant with the fensible qualities of things, hardly any more than the imagination feems concerned; little more also than the imagination seems concerned when the passions are represented, because by the force of natural sympathy they are felt in all men without any recourse to reasoning, and their justness recognized in every breaft. Love, grief, fear, anger, joy, all these passions have in their turns affected every mind; and they do not affect it in an arbitrary or casual manner, but upon certain, natural and uniform principles. But as many of the works of ima-

gination.

gination are not confined to the representation of sensible objects, nor to efforts upon the passions, but extend themselves to the manners, the characters, the actions, and deligns of men, their relations, their virtues and vices, they come within the province of the judgment, which is improved by attention and by the habit of reasoning. All these make a very considerable part of what are considered as the objects of Taste; and Horace fends us to the schools of philosophy and the world for our instruction in them. Whatever certainty is to be acquired in morality and the science of life; just the same degree of certainty have we in what relates to them in works of imitation. Indeed it is for the most part in our skill in manners, and in the observances of time and place, and of decency in general, which is only to be learned in those schools to which Horace recommends us, that what is called Tafte by way of diffinction, confifts; and which is in reality no other than a more refined judgment. On the whole it appears to me, that what is called Tafte, in its most general acceptation, is not a simple idea.

idea, but is partly made up of a perception of the primary pleasures of sense, of the fecondary pleasures of the imagination, and of the conclusions of the reasoning faculty, concerning the various relations of thefe, and concerning the human passions, manners and actions. All this is requifite to form Tafte, and the ground-work of all these is the same in the human mind; for as our fenses are the great originals of all our ideas, and consequently of all our pleasures, if they are not uncertain and arbitrary, the whole ground-work of Tafte is common to all, and therefore there is a fufficient foundation for a conclusive reasoning on these matters.

Whilst we consider Taste, merely according to its nature and species, we shall find its principles entirely uniform; but the degree in which these principles prevail in the several individuals of mankind, is altogether as different as the principles themselves are similar. For sensibility and judgment which are the qualities that compose what we commonly call a Taste, vary exceedingly in various people. From a deceedingly in various people.

fect in the former of these qualities, arises a want of Tafte; a weakness in the latter, constitutes a wrong or a bad one. There are some men formed with feelings so blunt, with tempers fo cold and phlegmatic, that they can hardly be faid to be awake during the whole course of their lives. Upon fuch persons the most striking objects make but a faint and obscure impression. There are others fo continually in the agitation of gross and merely sensual pleasures, or so occupied in the low drudgery of avarice, or fo heated in the chace of honour and distinction, that their minds which had been used continually to the storms of these violent and tempestuous passions, can hardly be put in motion by the delicate and refined play of the imagination. These men, though from a different cause become as stupid and insensible as the former; but whenever either of these happen to be struck with any natural elegance or greatness, or with these qualities in any work of art, they are moved upon the fame principle.

The cause of a wrong Taste is a desect of judgment. And this may arise from a

natural weakness of understanding (in whatever the strength of that faculty may confift) or, which is much more commonly the case, it may arise from a want of a proper and well directed exercise which alone can make it strong and ready. Besides that ignorance, inattention, prejudice, rashness, levity, obstinacy, in short, all those passions, and all those vices which prevent the judgment in other matters, prejudice it no less in this its more refined and elegant province. These causes produce different opinions upon every thing which is an object of the understanding, without inducing us to suppose, that there are no settled principles of reason. And indeed on the whole one may observe, that there is rather less difference upon matters of Tafte among mankind, than upon most of those which depend upon the naked reason; and that men are far better agreed on the excellence of a description in Virgil, than on the truth or falsehood of a theory of Aristotle.

A rectitude of judgment in the arts, which may be called a good Taste, does in a great measure depend upon sensibility;

because

because if the mind has no bent to the pleafure of the imagination, it will never apply itself sufficiently to works of that species to acquire a competent knowledge in them. But, though a degree of fensibility is requifite to form a good judgment, yet a good judgment does not necessarily arise from a quick fensibility of pleasure; it frequently happens that a very poor judge, merely by force of a greater complexional fenfibility, is more affected by a very poor piece, than the best judge by the most perfect; for as every thing new, extraordinary, grand, or passionate is well calculated to affect such a person, and that the faults do not affect him, his pleasures is more pure and unmixed; and as it is merely a pleafure of the imagination, it is much higher than any which is derived from a rectitude of the judgment; the judgment is for the greater part employed in throwing stumbling blocks in the way of the imagination, in distipating the scenes of its enchantment, and in tying us down to the disagreeable yoke of our reason: for almost the only pleasure that men have in judging better than C a

than others, consists in a fort of conscious pride and superiority, which arises from thinking rightly; but then, this is an indirect pleasure, a pleasure which does not immediately refult from the object which is under contemplation. In the morning of our days, when the fenfes are unworn and tender, when the whole man is awake in every part, and the gloss of novelty fresh upon all the objects that furround us, how lively at that time are our fensations, but now falle and inaccurate the judgments we form of things? I despair of ever receiving the same degree of pleasure from the most excellent performances of genius, which I felt at that age from pieces which my prefent judgment regards as trifling and contemptible. Every trivial cause of pleasure is apt to affect the man of too fanguine a complexion: his appetite is too keen to fuffer his Tafte to be delicate; and he is in all respects what Ovid says of himself in love,

Molle meum levibus cor est violabile telis, Et semper causa est, cur ego semper amem. One of this character can never be a refined judge; never what the comic poet calls elegans formarum spectator. The excellence and form of a composition must always be imperfectly esteemed from its effect on the minds of any, except we know the temper and character of those minds. The most powerful effects of poetry and mulic have been displayed, and perhaps are still difplayed, where these arts are but in a very low and imperfect state. The rude hearer is affected by the principles which operate in these arts even in their rudest condition: and he is not skilful enough to perceive the defects. But as the arts advance towards their perfection, the science of criticism advances with equal pace, and the pleasure of judges is frequently interrupted by the faults which are discovered in the most finished compositions.

Before I leave this subject I cannot help taking notice of an opinion which many persons entertain, as if the Taste were a separate faculty of the mind, and distinct from the judgment and imagination; a species of instinct by which we are struck

naturally, and at the first glance, without any previous reasoning with the excellencies, or the defects of a composition. So far as the imagination and the passions are concerned I believe it true, that the reason is little consulted; but where disposition, where decorum, where congruity are concerned, in short wherever the best Taste differs from the worft. I am convinced that the understanding operates and nothing elfe; and its operation is in reality far from being always sudden, or when it is sudden, it is often far from being right. Men of the best Taste by consideration, come frequently to change these early and precipitate judgments which the mind from its aversion to neutrality and doubt loves to form on the spot. It is known that the Taste (whatever it is) is improved exactly as we improve our judgment, by extending our knowledge, by a steady attention to our object, and by frequent exercise. They who have not taken these methods, if their Taste decides quickly, it is always uncertainly; and their quickness is owing to their presumption and rashness, and not

to any fudden irradiation that in a moment dispels all darkness from their minds. But they who have cultivated that species of knowledge which makes the object of Tafte, by degrees and habitually attain not only a foundness, but a readiness of judgment, as men do by the same methods on all other occasions. At first they are obliged to spell, but at last they read with ease and with celerity: but this celerity of its operation is no proof that the Taste is a distinct faculty. Nobody, I believe, has attended the course of a discussion, which turned upon matters within the sphere of mere naked reason, but must have observed the extreme readiness with which the whole process of the argument is carried on, the grounds discovered, the objections raised and anfwered, and the conclusions drawn from premisses, with a quickness altogether as great as the Tafte can be supposed to work with; and yet where nothing but plain reason either is or can be suspected to operate. To multiply principles for every different appearance, is useless, and unphilosophical too in a high degree,

## 34 INTRODUCTION.

This matter might be pursued much farther but it is not the extent of the subject which must prescribe our bounds, for what subject does not branch out to infinity? it is the nature of our particular scheme and the single point of view in which we consider it, which ought to put a stop to our researches.

but an istention read, with exit and with color or color is a color for the color is a colliner section.

The Color is a colliner to the colliner is a colliner to the color is a colliner to the color.

reason, but must have observed the extrement reasons from the cytrement reasons from the whole produced in the extrement is carried, only the ignorance of the argument is carried, only the ignorance of the argument, which objections rained and antimered, and reason conclusions drawn spansing paramiles, within spancings alsogether are produced as the Eulie can be hipposed to work with paramiles and the Eulie can be hipposed to work to sale and the can be hipposed to one-

deferent appearance, is reclais, and unplailoroplacal to a trigh degrae, but

re-id As multiply propelled for every

# Philosophical Enquiry

INTO THE

## ORIGIN OF OUR IDEAS

OFTHE

Sublime and Beautiful.

PART I.

SECT. I.

NOVELTY.

THE first and the simplest emotion which we discover in the human mind, is Curiosity. By curiosity, I mean whatever desire we have for, or whatever pleasure we take in, novelty. We see children perpetually running from place to place to hunt out something new; they catch with great eagerness, and with very little choice, at whatever comes before them; their attention is engaged by every thing, because every thing has, in that stage

of life, the charm of novelty to recommend it. But as those things which engage us merely by their novelty cannot attach us for any length of time, curiofity is the most superficial of all the affections; it changes its object perpetually; it has an appetite which is very sharp, but very easily satisfied; and it has always an appearance of giddiness, reftlessness and anxiety. Curiofity from its nature is a very active principle; it quickly runs over the greatest part of its objects, and foon exhaufts the variety which is commonly to be met with in nature; the fame things make frequent returns, and they return with less and less of any agreeable effect. In short the occurrences of life, by the time we come to know it a little, would be incapable of affecting the mind with any other fensations than those of loathing and weariness, if many things were not adapted to affect the minds by means of other powers befides novelty in them, and of other passions besides curiosity in ourselves. These powers and passions shall be considered in their place. But whatever these powers are, or upon what principle soever they affect the mind,

mind, it is absolutely necessary that they should not be exerted in those things which a daily and vulgar use have brought into a stale unaffected familiarity. Some degree of novelty must be one of the materials in every instrument which works upon the mind; and curiosity blends itself more or less with all our passions.

# SECT. II. PAIN and PLEASURE.

T feems then necessary towards moving the passions of people advanced in life to any confiderable degree, that the objects defigned for that purpose, besides their being in some measure new, should be capable of exciting pain or pleafure from other causes. Pain and pleasure are simple ideas. incapable of definition. People are not liable to be mistaken in their feelings, but they are very frequently wrong in the names they give them, and in their reasonings about them. Many are of opinion, that pain arises necessarily from the removal of some pleasure; as they think pleasure does from the ceasing or diminution of fome

fome pain. For my part, I am rather inclined to imagine, that pain and pleasure in their most simple and natural manner of affecting, are each of a politive nature, and by no means necessarily dependent on each other for their existence. The human mind is often, and I think it is for the most part, in a state neither of pain nor pleasure, which I call a state of indifference. When I am carried from this state into a state of actual pleasure, it does not appear necesfary that I should pass through the medium of any fort of pain. If in such a state of indifference, or ease, or tranquillity, or call it what you please, you were to be suddenly entertained with a concert of music: or suppose some object of a fine shape, and bright lively colours to be presented before you; or imagine your smell is gratified with the fragrance of a role; or if without any previous thirst your were to drink of some pleasant kind of wine; or to taste of some fweet-meat without being hungry; in all the feveral fenfes, of hearing, fmelling, and tafting, you undoubtedly find a pleasure; yet if I enquire into the state of your mind previous to these gratifications, you will hardly

hardly tell me that they found you in any kind of pain; or having satisfied these several senses with their several pleasures, will you fay that any pain has succeeded, though the pleasure is absolutely over? Suppose on the other hand, a man in the same state of indifference, to receive a violent blow, or to drink of some bitter potion, or to have his ears wounded with some harsh and grating found; here is no removal of pleasure; and yet here is felt, in every sense which is affected, pain very distinguishable. It may be faid perhaps, that the pain in these cases had its rife from the removal of the pleafure which the mind enjoyed before, though that pleasure was of so low a degree as to be perceived only by the removal. But this feems to me a subtilty, that is not discoverable in nature. For if, previous to the pain, I do not feel any actual pleasure, I have no reason to judge that any such thing exists; since pleasure is only pleasure as it is felt. The same may be said of pain, and with equal reason. I can never persuade myself that pleasure and pain are mere relations, which can only exist as they are contrasted : but I think I can discern clearly that

## On the SUBLIME

that there are positive pains and pleasures, which do not at all depend upon each other. Nothing is more certain to my own feelings than this. There is nothing which I can diftinguish in my mind with more clearness than the three states, of indifference, of pleasure, and of pain. Every one of these I can perceive without any fort of idea of its relation to any thing elfe. Caius is afflicted with a fit of the cholic; this man is actually in pain; stretch Caius upon the rack, he will feel a much greater pain; but does this pain of the rack arise from the removal of any pleasure? or is the fit of the cholic a pleasure or a pain just as we are pleased to call it?

#### SECT. III.

The difference between the removal of PAIN and positive PLEASURE.

E shall carry this proposition yet a step further. We shall venture to propose, that pain and pleasure are not only, not necessarily dependent for their existence on their mutual diminution or removal, but that, in reality, the diminution

or cealing of pleasure does not operate like politive pain; and that the removal or diminution of pain, in its effect, has very little resemblance to positive pleasure\*. The former of these propositions will, I believe, be much more readily allowed than the latter; because it is very evident that pleafure, when it has run its career, fets us down very nearly where it found us. Pleasure of every kind quickly fatisfies; and when it is over, we relapse into indifference, or rather we fall into a fost tranquillity, which is tinged with the agreeable colour of the former sensation. I own, it is not at first view fo apparent, that the removal of a great pain does not resemble positive pleafure: but let us recollect in what state we have found our minds upon escaping some imminent danger, or on being released from the severity of some cruel pain, We have on fuch occasions found, if I am not much mistaken, the temper of our minds

<sup>\*</sup> Mr. Locke. [Essay on human understanding, 1. 2. c. 20. sect. 16.] thinks that the removal or lesssoning of a pain is considered and operates as a pleasure, and the loss or diminishing of pleasure as a pain. It is this opinion which we consider here.

in a tenor very remote from that which attends the presence of positive pleasure; we have found them in a state of much sobriety, impressed with a sense of awe, in a sort of tranquillity shadowed with horror. The sashion of the countenance and the gesture of the body on such occasions are so correspondent to this state of mind, that any person, a stranger to the cause of the appearance, would rather judge us under some consternation, than in the enjoyment of any thing like positive pleasure.

Ως δ' οίαν ανδή αίη συκινη λαθη, ος εςι σαίξη Φωία καθακθεινας, αλλον εξικετο δημον, Ανδρος ες αφνειω, θαμθος δ' εχει εισοροωνίας.

Iliad. 24.

As when a wretch (who conscious of his crime, Pursued for murder, slies his native clime) Just gains some frontier, breathless, pale I amaz'd! All gaze, all wonder!

This striking appearance of the man whom Homer supposes to have just escaped an imminent danger, the fort of mixt passion of terror and surprize, with which he affects the spectators, paints very strongly the manner in which we find ourselves affected upon occasions any way similar. For when we have suffered from any violent emotion,

like the same condition, after the cause which first produced it has ceased to operate. The tossing of the sea remains after the storm: and when this remain of horror has entirely subsided, all the passion, which the accident raised, subsides along with it; and the mind returns to its usual state of indifference. In short, pleasure (I mean any thing either in the inward sensation, or in the outward appearance like pleasure from a positive cause) has never, I imagine, its origin from the removal of pain or danger.

## SECT IV.

Of DELIGHT and PLEASURE, as opposed to each other.

BUT shall we therefore say, that the removal of pain or its diminution, is always simply painful? or affirm that the cessation or the lessening of pleasure is always attended itself with a pleasure? by no means. What I advance is no more than this; first, that there are pleasures and pains of a positive and independent nature; and secondly, that the seeling which results from

the ceasing or diminution of pain does not bear a sufficient resemblance of positive pleafure to have it confidered as of the fame nature, or to entitle it to be known by the fame name; and thirdly, that upon the fame principle the removal or qualification of pleasure has no resemblance to positive pain. It is certain that the former feeling (the removal or moderation of pain) has fomething in it far from diffreshing, or difagreeable in its nature. This feeling, in many cases so agreeable, but in all so different from politive pleasure, has no name which I know; but that hinders not its being a very real one, and very different from all others. It is most certain, that every species of satisfaction or pleasure, how different soever in its manner of affecting, is of a politive nature in the mind of him who feels it. The affection is undoubtedly positive; but the cause may be, as in this case it certainly is, a fort of Privation And it is very reasonable that we should distingish by some term two things so distinct in nature, as a pleafure that is fuch fimply, and without any relation, from that pleafure, which cannot exist without a relation, and.

and that too a relation to pain. Very extraordinary it would be, if these affections, fo diftinguishable in their causes, so different in their effects, should be confounded with each other, because vulgar use has ranged them under the same general title. Whenever I have occasion to speak of this species of relative pleasure, I call it Delight; and I shall take the best care I can, to use that word in no other fense. I am satisfied the word is not commonly used in this appropriated fignification; but I thought it better to take up a word already known, and to limit its fignification, than to introduce a new one which would not perhaps incorporate fo well with the language. I should never have presumed the least alteration in our words, if the nature of the language, framed for the purposes of business rather than those of philosophy, and the nature of my subject that leads me out of the common track of discourse, did not in a manner necessitate me to it. I shall make use of this liberty with all possible caution. As I make use of the word De. light to express the sensation which accompanie's the removal of pain or danger; fo when

on the SUBLIME when I speak of positive pleasure, I shall for the most part call it simply pleasure.

## SECT. V.

## JOY and GRIEF.

T must be observed that the cessation of pleasure affects the mind three ways. If it fimply ceases, after having continued a proper time, the effect is indifference; if it be abruptly broken off, there enfues an uneasy sense called disappointment; if the object be so totally lost that there is no chance of enjoying it again, a passion arises in the mind, which is called grief. Now there is none of these, not even grief, which is the most violent, that I think has any resemblance to positive pain. The person who grieves, fuffers his passion to grow upon him; he indulges it, he loves it; but this never happens in the case of actual pain, which no man ever willingly endured for any considerable time. That grief should be willingly endured, though far from a fimply pleasing sensation, is not so difficult to be understood. It is the nature of grief to keep its object perpetually in its eye, to present it in its most pleasurable views, to repeat

repeat all the circumstances that attend it, even to the last minuteness; to go back to every particular enjoyment, to dwell upon each, and to find a thousand new perfections in all, that were not fufficiently understood before; in grief, the pleasure is still uppermost; and the affliction we suffer has no resemblance to absolute pain, which is always odious, and which we endeavour. to shake off as foon as possible. The Odyffey of Homer, which abounds with fo many natural and affecting images, has none more striking than those which Menelaus raises of the calamitous fate of his friends, and his own manner of feeling it. owns indeed, that he often gives himself fome intermission from such melancholy reflections, but he observes too, that melancholy as they are, they give him pleasure.

Αλλ εμπης σανίας μεν οδυζομενος και αχευων, Πολλακις εν μεγαζοισι καθημενος ημέλεξοισιν Αλλόλε μεν τε γοω Φρενα τερπομαι, αλλόλε δ' αυλε Παυομαι αλλολε δ κοξος κευεξοιο γοσιο.

Still in short intervals of pleasing woe, Regardless of the friendly dues I owe, I to the glorious dead, for ever dear! Indulge the tribute of a grateful tear.

Hom. Od. 4.

On the other hand, when we recover our health, when we escape an imminent danger, it is with joy that we are affected? The sense on these occasions is far from that smooth and voluptuous satisfaction which the assured prospect of pleasure bestows. The delight which arises from the modifications of pain, confesses the stock from whence it sprung, in its solid, strong, and severe nature.

#### SECT. VI.

Of the Passions which belong to SELF-PRESERVATION.

of making a powerful impression on the mind, whether simply of Pain or Pleafure or of the modifications of those, may be reduced very nearly to these two heads, felf preservation and society, to the ends of one or the other of which all our passions which concern self-preservation, turn mostly on pain or danger. The ideas of pain, suckness, and death, fill the mind with strong emotions of horror; but life and bealth, though

affected with pleasure, they make no such impression by the simple enjoyment. The passions therefore which are conversant about the preservation of the individual, turn chiefly on pain and danger, and they are the most powerful of all the passions.

## SECT. VII.

## Of the SUBLIME.

THatever is fitted in any fort to excite the ideas of pain, and danger, that is to fay, whatever is in any fort terrible, or is conversant about terrible objects, or operates in a manner analogous to terror, is a source of the sublime; that is, it is productive of the strongest emotion which the mind is capable of feeling. I fay the strongest emotion, because I am satisfied the ideas of pain are much more powerful than those which enter on the part of pleafure. Without all doubt, the torments which we may be made to fuffer, are much greater in their effect on the body and mind, than any pleasures which the most learned voluptuary could fuggeft, or thar

the livelieft imagination, and the most found and exquisitely sensible body could enjoy. Nay I am in great doubt, whether any man could be found who would earn a life of the most perfect satisfaction, at the price of ending it in the torments, which justice inflicted in a few hours on the late unfortunate regicide in France. But as pain is stronger in its operation than pleasure, so death is in general a much more affecting idea than pain; because there are very few pains, however exquisite, which are not preferred to death; nay, what generally makes pain itself, if I may say so, more painful, is, that it is considered as an emissary of this king of terrors. When danger or pain press too nearly, they are incapable of giving any delight, and are simply terrible; but at certain diffances, and with certain modifications, they may be, and they are delightful, as we every day experience. The cause of this I shall endeavour to investigate hereafter.

greater in their effect on the body and

th

#### SECT. VIII.

Of the passions which belong to SOCIETY.

HE other head under which I class our passions, is that of society. which may be divided into two forts, 1. The fociety of the fexes, which anfwers the purposes of propagation; and next, that more general society, which we have with men and with other animals, and which we may in some fort be faid to have even with the inanimate world. The passions belonging to the preservation of the individual, turn wholly on pain and danger; those which belong to generation, have their origin in gratifications and pleafures; the pleafure most directly belonging to this purpose is of a lively character, rap-w turous and violent, and confessedly the highest pleasure of sense; yet the absence of this fo great an enjoyment, scarce amounts to an uneafines; and except at particular times. I do not think it affects at all. When men describe in what manner they are affected by pain and danger; they do not dwell on the pleasure of health and the comfort of fecurity, and then lament

the loss of these satisfactions: the whole turns upon the actual pains and horrors which they endure. But if you liften to the complaints of a forfaken lover, you obferve, that he infifts largely on the pleasures which he enjoyed, or hoped to enjoy, and on the perfection of the object of his defires; it is the loss which is always uppermost in his mind. The violent effects produced by love, which has fometimes been even wrought up to madness, is no objection to the rule which we feek to establish. When men have suffered their imaginations to be long affected with any idea, it fo wholly engroffes them as to shut out by degrees almost every other, and to break down every partition of the mind which would confine it. Any idea is sufficient for the purpole, as is evident from the infinite variety of causes which give rise to madness: but this at most can only prove. that the passion of love is capable of producing very extraordinary effects, not that its extraordinary emotions have any connection with politive pains,

do not dwell on the clearing life

#### SECT. IX.

The final cause of the difference between the passions belonging to SELF-PRE-SERVATION, and those which regard the SOCIETY of the SEXES.

THE final cause of the difference in character between the passions which regard felf-preservation, and those which are directed to the multiplication of the species, will illustrate the foregoing remarks yet further; and it is, I imagine, worthy of observation even upon its own account. As the performance of our duties of every kind depends upon life, and the performing them with vigour and efficacy depends upon health, we are very strongly affected with whatever threatens the destruction of either; but as we were not made to acquiesce in life and health, the simple enjoyment of them is not attended with real pleasure, lest satisfied with that, we should give ourselves over to indolence and inaction. On the other hand, the generation of mankind is a great purpole, and itis requifite that men should be animated

to the pursuit of it by some great incentive. It is therefore attended with a very high pleasure; but as it is by no means designed to be our constant business, it is not fit that the absence of this pleasure should be attended with any confiderable pain. The difference between men and brutes in this point, feems to be remarkable. Men are at all times pretty equally disposed to the pleasures of love, because they are to be guided by reason in the time and manner of indulging them. Had any great pain arisen from the want of this satisfaction, reason, I am afraid, would find great difficulties in the performance of its office. But brutes who obey laws, in the execution of which their own reason has but little share, have their stated seasons; at such times it is not improbable that the sensation from the want is very troublesome, because the end must be then answered, or be missed in many, perhaps for ever; as the inclination returns only with its seasons.

# SECT. X. OF BEAUTY.

HE passion which belongs to generation, merely as fuch, is lust only; this is evident in brutes, whose passions are more unmixed, and which purfue their purposes more directly than ours. The only distinction they observe with regard to their mates, is that of fex. It is true, that they flick severally to their own species in preference to all others. But this preference, I imagine, does not arise from any sense of beauty which they find in their species, as Mr. Addison supposes, but from a law of fome other kind to which they are subject; and this we may fairly conclude, from their apparent want of choice amongst those objects to which the barriers of their species have confined them. But man, who is a creature adapted to a greater variety and intricacy of relation, connects with the general passion, the idea of some focial. qualities, which direct and heighten the appetite which he has in common with all nest reduced a gol Dy to of air beins other

neswied

other animals; and as he is not defigned like them to live at large, it is fit that he should have something to create a preference, and fix his choice; and this in general should be some sensible quality; as no other can so quickly, so powerfully, or so furely produce its effect. The object therefore of this mixed passion which we call love, is the beauty of the fex. Men are carried to the fex in general, as it is the fex, and by the common law of nature: but they are attached to particulars by perfonal beauty. I call beauty a focial quality: for where women and men, and not only they, but when other animals give us a fense of joy and pleasure in beholding them, and (there are many that do fo) they inspire us with sentiments of tenderness and affection towards their persons; we like to have them near us, and we enter willingly into a kind of relation with them, unless we should have strong reasons to the contrary. But to what end, in many cases, this was defigned, I am unable to discover; for I see no greater reason for a connection between man and feveral animals who are attired in fo engaging a manner, than between

between him and some others who entirely want this attraction, or possess it in a far weaker degree. But it is probable, that Providence did not make even this distinction, but with a view to some great end, though we cannot perceive distinctly what it is, as his wisdom is not our wisdom, nor our ways his ways.

## SECT. XI.

#### SOCIETY and SOLITUDE.

fions, is that which administers to fociety in general. With regard to this, I observe, that society, merely as society, without any particular heightenings, gives us no positive pleasure in the enjoyment; but absolute and entire folitude, that is, the total and perpetual exclusion from all society, is as great a positive pain as can almost be conceived. Therefore in the balance between the pleasure of general fociety, and the pain of absolute solitude, pain is the predominant idea. But the pleasure of any particular social enjoyment outweighs very considerably the uneasiness

caused by the want of that particular enjoyment; fo that the strongest sensations relative to the habitudes of particular society, are fensations of pleasure. Good company, lively conversations, and the endearments of friendship, fill the mind with great pleasure; a temporary solitude on the other hand, is itself agreeable. This may perhaps prove, that we are creatures defigned for contemplation as well as action; fince solitude as well as society has its pleafures; as from the former observation we may discern, that an entire life of solitude contradicts the purposes of our being, since death itself is scarcely an idea of more terror.

# SECT. XII. SYMPATHY, IMITATION, and AMBITION.

UNDER this denomination of society, the passions are of a complicated kind, and branch out into a variety of forms, agreeable to that variety of ends they are to serve in the great chain of society. The three principal links in this chain are sympathy, imitation, and ambition.

SECT.

## SECT. XIII. SYMPATHY.

of pleasure, This taken as a late, has IT is by the first of these passions that we enter into the concerns of others; that we are moved as they are moved, and are never suffered to be indifferent spectators of almost any thing which men can do or fuffer. For fympathy must be considered as a fort of substitution, by which we are put into the place of another man, and affected in many respects as he is affected; fo that this passion may either partake of the nature of those which regard self-prefervation, and turning upon pain may be a fource of the sublime; or it may turn upon ideas of pleasure; and then, whatever has been faid of the focial affections, whether they regard fociety in general, or only fome particular modes of it, may be applicable here. It is by this principle chiefly that poetry, painting, and other affecting arts, transfule their pations from one breaft to another, and are often capable of grafting a delight on wretchedness, misery, and death itself. It is a common observation, that . effect of transdying a prope

that objects which in the reality would shock, are in tragical, and such like reprefentations, the source of a very high species of pleasure. This taken as a fact, has been the cause of much reasoning. The fatisfaction has been commonly attributed, first, to the comfort we receive in considering that so melancholy a story is no more than a fiction; and next, to the contemplation of our own freedom from the evils which we see represented. I am afraid it is a practice much too common in inquiries of this nature, to attribute the cause of feelings which merely arise from the mechanical structure of our bodies, or from the natural frame and conflitution of our minds. to certain conclusions of the reasoning faculty on the objects presented to us; for I should imagine, that the influence of reafon in producing our passions, is nothing near fo extensive as it is commonly believed.

#### SECT. XIV.

The effects of SYMPATHY in the

To examine this point concerning the effect of tragedy in a proper manner,

we must previously consider, how we are affected by the feelings of our fellow creatures in circumstances of real distress. I am convinced we have a degree of delight. and that no small one, in the real misfortunes and pains of others; for let the affection be what it will in appearance, if it does not make us thun fuch objects, if on the contrary, it induces us to approach them, if it makes us dwell upon them, in this case, I conceive we must have a delight or pleasure of some species or other in contemplating objects of this kind. Do we not read the authentic histories of scenes of this nature with as much pleasure as romances or poems, where the incidents are fictitious? The prosperity of no empire, nor the grandeur of no king, can so agreeably affect in the reading, as the ruin of the . ftate of Macedon, and the diffress of its unhappy prince. Such a catastrophe touches us in hiftory as much as the destruction of Troy does in fable. Our delight in cafes of this kind, is very greatly heightened, if the sufferer be some excellent person who finks under an unworthy fortune Scipio and Cato are both virtuous charac-

ters; but we are more deeply affected by the violent death of the one, and the ruin of the great cause he adhered to, than with the deferved triumphs and uninterrupted prosperity of the other; for terror is a passion which always produces delight when it does not press too close, and pity is a passion accompanied with pleasure, because it arises from love and social affection. Whenever we are formed by nature to any active purpose, the passion which animates us to it, is attended with delight, or a pleasure of some kind, let the subject matter be what it will; and as our creator has defigned we should be united by the bond of sympathy, he has strengthened that bond by a proportionable delight; and there most where our sympathy is most wanted, in the distresses of others. If this passion was simply painful, we would thun with the greatest care all persons and places that could excite such a passion; as, some who are so far gone in indolence as not to endure any strong impression actually do. But the case is widely different with the greater part of mankind; there is no spectacle we so eagerly pursue, as that of

of some uncommon and grievous calamity; so that whether the misfortune is before our eyes, or whether they are turned back to it in hiftory, it always touches with delight. This is not an unmixed delight, but blended with no small uneasiness. The delight we have in such things, hinders us from shunning scenes of misery; and the pain we feel, prompts us to relieve ourfelves in relieving those who fuffer; and all this antecedent to any reasoning, by an instinct that works us to its own purposes, without our concurrence.

## SECT. XV. Of the effects of TRAGEDY.

TT is thus in real calamities. In imitated diffresses the only difference is the pleafure resulting from the effects of imitation; for it is never fo perfect, but we can perceive it is an imitation, and on that principle are fornewhat pleafed with it. And indeed in some cases we derive as much or more pleafure from that fource than from the thing itself. But then I imagine we shall be much mistaken if we attribute yeard by to engans chure to do, bom

any confiderable part of our fatisfaction in tragedy to the confideration that tragedy is a deceit, and its representations no realities. The nearer it approaches the reality, and the further it removes us from all idea of fiction, the more perfect is its power. But be its power of what kind it will, it never approaches to what it reprefents. Chuse a day on which to represent the most sublime and affecting tragedy we have; appoint the most favourite actors; spare no cost upon the scenes and decorations; unite the greatest efforts of poetry, painting and music; and when you have collected your audience, just at the moment when their minds are erect with expectation, let it be reported that a state criminal of high rank is on the point of being executed in the adjoining fquare; in a moment the emptiness of the theatre would demonstrate the comparative weakness of the imitative arts, and proclaim the triumph of the real sympathy. I believe that this notion of our having a fimple pain in the reality, yet a delight in the representation, arises from hence, that we do not sufficiently distinguish what we would by no means chuse to do, from what

we should be eager enough to see if it was once done. We delight in feeing things, which fo far from doing, our heartiest wiftes would be to fee redreffed. This noble capital, the pride of England and of Europe, I believe no man is so strangely wicked as to defire to fee destroyed by a conflagration or an earthquake, though he fhould be removed himself to the greatest distance from the danger. But suppose fuch a fatal accident to have happened, what numbers from all parts would croud to behold the ruins, and amongst them many who would have been content never to have feen London in its glory? Nor is it either in real or fictitious distresses, our immunity from them which produces our delight; in my own mind I can discover nothing like it. I apprehend that this mistake is owing to a fort of fophism, by which we are frequently imposed upon; it arises from our not distinguishing between what is indeed a necessary condition toour doing or fuffering any thing in general, and what is the cause of some particular act. If a man kills me with a fword, it is a necessary condition to this, that we Chould-

should have been both of us alive before the fact; and yet it would be abfurd to fay, that our being both living creatures was the cause of his crime and of my death. So it is certain, that it is absolutely necessary my life should be out of any imminent hazard before I can take a delight in the fufferings of others, real or imaginary, or indeed in any thing else from any cause whatfoever. But then it is a fophism to argue from thence, that this immunity is the cause of my delight, either on these or on any occasions. No one can diftinguish such a cause of satisfaction in his own mind I believe; nay when we do not fuffer any very acute pain, nor are exposed to any imminent danger of our lives, we can feel for others, whilst we fuffer ourselves; and often then most when we are sostened by affliction; we fee with pity even distresses which we would accept in the place of our own.

## SECT. XVI.

### IMITATION.

THE second passion belonging to society is imitation, or, if you will, a desire of imitating, and consequently a pleasure

pleasure in it. This passion arises from much the same cause with sympathy. For as sympathy makes us take a concern in whatever men feel, so this affection prompts us to copy whatever they do; and confequently we have a pleasure in imitating, and in whatever belongs to imitation, merely as it is fuch, without any intervention of the reasoning faculty, but solely from our natural constitution, which providence has framed in such a manner as to find either pleasure or delight according to the nature of the object, in whatever regards the purposes of our being. It is by imitation far more than by precept that we learn every thing; and what we learn thus we acquire not only more effectually, but more pleasantly. This forms our manners, our opinions, our lives. It is one of the strongest links of society; it is a species of mutual compliance which all men yield to each other, without constraint to themfelves, and which is extremely flattering to all. Herein it is that painting and many other agreeable arts, have laid one of the principal foundations of their power. And fince by its influence on

our feelings it is of great consequence; I shall here venture to lay down a rule, which may inform us with a good degree of certainty when we are to attribute the power of the arts, to imitation, or to our pleasure in the skill of the imitator merely, and when to sympathy, or some other cause in conjunction with it. When the object represented in poetry or painting is such, as we could have no defire of feeing in the reality; then I may be fure that its power in poetry or painting is owing to the power of imitation, and to no cause operating in the thing itself. So it is with most of the pieces which the painters call still life. In these a cottage, a dunghill, the meanest and most ordinary utenfils of the kitchen, are capable of giving us pleasure. But when the object of the painting or poem is fuch as we should run to fee if real, let it affect us with what. odd fort of fense it will, we may rely upon it, that the power of the poem or picture is more owing to the nature of the thing itself than to the mere effect of imitation, or to a confideration of the skill of the imitator however excellent. Aristotle has spoken so much and so solidly upon the force . force of imitation in his poetics, that it makes any further discourse upon this subject the less necessary.

## SECT. XVII.

#### AMBITION.

LTHOUGH imitation is one of the great instruments used by providence in bringing our nature towards its perfection, yet if men gave themselves up to imitation entirely and each followed the other, and so on in an eternal circle, it is easy to fee that there never could be any improvement amongst them. Men must remain as brutes do, the same at the end that they are at this day, and that they were in the beginning of the world. To prevent this, God has planted in man a fense of ambition, and a fatisfaction arifing from the contemplation of his excelling his fellows in fomething deemed valuable amongst them. It is this passion that drives men to all the ways we see in use, of fignalizing themfelves, and that tends to make whatever excites in a man the idea of this diffinction fo very pleafant. It has been fo ftrong as

to make very miserable men take comfort that they were supreme in misery; and certain it is, that where we cannot diftinguish ourselves by something excellent, we begin to take a complacency in some singular infirmities, follies, or defects of one kind or It is on this principle that flattery other. is fo prevalent; for flattery is no more than what raises in a mans mind an idea of a preference which he has not. Now whatever either on good or upon bad grounds tends to raise a man in his own opinion, produces a fort of swelling and triumph that is extremely grateful to the human mind; and this swelling is never more perceived, nor operates with more force, than when without danger we are conversant with terrible objects, the mind always claiming to itself some part of the dignity and importance of the things which it contemplates. Hence proceeds what Longinus has observed of that glorying and fense of inward greatness, that always fills the reader of fuch passages in poets and orators as are fublime; it is what every man must have felt in himself upon such occasions.

## SECT. XVIII.

### The RECAPITULATION.

faid into a few distinct points. The passions which belong to self-preservation, turn on pain and danger; they are simply painful when their causes immediately affect us; they are delightful when we have an idea of pain and danger, without being actually in such circumstances; this delight I have not called pleasure, because it turns on pain, and because it is different enough from any idea of positive pleasure. Whatever excites this delight, I call sublime. The passions belonging to self-preservation are the strongest of all passions.

The second head to which the passions are referred with relation to their final cause, is society. There are two sorts of societies. The first is, the society of sex. The passion belonging to this is called love, and it contains a mixture of lust; its object is the beauty of women. The other is the great society with man and all other animals. The passion subservient to inis is called

called likewise love, but it has no mixture of luft, and its object is beauty, which is a name I shall apply to all such qualities in things as induce in us a fense of affection and tenderness, or some other passion the most nearly resembling these. The passion of love has its rife in politive pleasure; it is, like all things which grow out of pleafure, capable of being mixed with a mode of uneafiness, that is when an idea of its object is excited in the mind with an idea at the same time of having irretrievably lost it. This mixed sense of pleasure I have not called pain, because it turns upon actual pleasure, and because it is both in its cause and in most of its effects of a nature altogether different,

Next to the general passion we have for society, to a choice in which we are directed by the pleasure we have in the object, the particular passion under this head called sympathy has the greatest extent. The nature of this passion is to put us in the place of another in whatever circumstance he is in, and to affect us in a like manner; so that this passion may, as the occasion requires, turn either on pain a pleasure.

pleasure; but with the modifications mentioned in some cases in sect. 11. As to imitation and preference, nothing more need be said.

## SECT. XIX. The CONCLUSION.

Believed that an attempt to range and methodize some of our most leading passions, would be a good preparative to fuch an enquiry as we are going to make in the enfuing discourse. The passions I have mentioned are almost the only ones which it can be necessary to consider in our present design; though the variety of the passions is great, and worthy, in every branch of that variety, of an attentive investigation. The more accurately we search into the human mind, the stronger traces we every where find of his wisdom who made it. If a discourse on the use of the parts of the body may be confidered as an hymn to the Creator, the use of the passions, which are the organs of the mind, cannot be barren of praise to him, nor unproductive to ourselves of that noble and uncommon

uncommon union of science and admiration, which a contemplation of the works of infinite wisdom alone can afford to a rational mind; whilst referring to him whatever we find of right, or good, or fair in ourselves, discovering his strength and wisdom, even in our own weakness and imperfection, honouring them where we difcover them clearly, and adoring their profundity where we are lost in our fearch, we may be inquisitive without impertinence. and elevated without pride; we may be admitted, if I may dare to fay fo, into the counfels of the Almighty by a confideration of his works. The elevation of the mind ought to be the principal end of all our studies, which if they do not in some measure effect, they are of very little fervice to us. But befides, this great purpose, a consideration of the rationale of our passions seems to me very necessary for all who would affect them upon folid and fure principles. It is not enough to know them in general; to affect them after a delicate manner, or to judge properly of any work defigned to affect them, we should know the exact boundaries of their feveral jurisdictions; we should pursue them thro' all

all their variety of operations, and pierce into the inmost, and what might appear inaccessible parts of our nature,

Quod latet arcana non enarrabile fibra.

Without all this, it is possible for a man, after a confused manner, sometimes to fatisfy his own mind of the truth of his work; but he can never have a certain determinate rule to go by, nor can he ever make his propolitions fufficiently clear to others. Poets, and orators, and painters. and those who cultivate other branches of the liberal arts, have without this critical knowledge succeeded well in their feveral provinces, and will facceed; as among artificers there are many machines made and even invented without any exact knowledge of the principles they are governed by. It is, I own, not uncommon to be wrong in theory and right in practice; and we are happy that it is fo. Men often act right from their feelings, who afterwards reason but ill on them from principle; but as it is impossible to avoid an attempt at fuch reasoning, and equally impossible to prevent its having some in-Auence on our practice, furely it is worth E 2 taking

taking some pains to have it just, and founded on the basis of sure experience. We might expect that the artists themfelves would have been our furest guides: but the artifts have been too much occupied in the practice; the philosophers have done little, and what they have done, was mostly with a view to their own schemes and fystems; and as for those called critics, they have generally fought the rule of the arts in the wrong place; they fought it among poems, pictures, engravings, statues, and buildings. But art can never give the rules that make an art. This is, I believe, the reason why artists in general, and poets principally, have been confined in fo narrow a circle; they have been rather imitators of one another than of nature: and this with so faithful an uniformity, and to so remote an antiquity, that it is hard to fay who gave the first model. Critics follow them, and therefore can do little as guides. I can judge but poorly of any thing whilft I measure it by no other standard than itself. The true standard of the arts is in every man's power; and an eafy observation of the most common, some times

times of the meanest things in nature, will give the truest lights, where the greatest fagacity and industry that slights such obfervation, must leave us in the dark, or what is worse, amuse and mislead us by false. lights. In an enquiry, it is almost every thing to be once in a right road. I am fatisfied I have done but little by these observations confidered in themselves; and I never should have taken the pains to digest them, much less should I have ever ventured to publish them, if I were not convinced that nothing tends more to the corruption of science than to suffer it to stagnate. These waters must be troubled before they can exert their virtues. A man who works beyond the furface of things, though he may be wrong himself, yet he clears the way: for others, and may chance to make even his errors subservient to the cause of truth. In the following parts I shall enquire what things they are that cause in us the affections of the fublime and beautiful, as in this I have confidered the affections themselves. I only defire one favour; that no part of this discourse may be judged of by itself and independently of the E 3

rest; for I am sensible, I have not disposed my materials to abide the test of a captious controversy, but of a sober and even forgiving examination; that they are not armed at all points for battle; but dressed to visit those who are willing to give a peaceful entrance to truth.

The end of the first Part,

ne sime isdesit. Sdr. a. 4. Tal.

- Missel for a amidulate la . 1912 Val

-origin stationabilities by all a submit to a

and the cast said of the cast fire cast

. Company of the latest and the late

enordae in electron and the constant objects in several constants.

## Philosophical Enquiry

ions and the The orange of the second

ORIGIN OF OUR IDEAS

OF THE

Sublime and Beautiful,

PART H.

SECT. I.

Of the passion caused by the SUBLIME.

THE passion caused by the great and sublime in nature, when those causes operate most powerfully, is astonishment; and astonishment is that state of the soul, in which all its motions are suspended, with some degree of horror. In this case the mind is so entirely filled with its object, that it cannot entertain any other, nor, by

Part & fell. 2. 4. 5: 6.

\* Part. 1. fect. 3. 4, 7.

e fablime, because mey and confidered

consequence, reason on that object which employs it. Hence arises the great power of the sublime, that far from being produced by them, it anticipates our reasonings, and hurries us on by an irresistible force. Astonishment, as I have said, is the effect of the sublime in its highest degree; the inferior effects are admiration, reverence and respect.

## SECT. H. TERROR.

of all its powers of acting and reafoning as fear. \*For, fear being an apprehension of pain or death, it operates in a
manner that resembles actual pain. Whatever therefore is terrible, with regard
to sight, is sublime too, whether this cause
of terror, be endued with greatness of
dimensions or not; for it is impossible to
look on any thing as trifling, or contemptible, that may be dangerous. There are
many animals, who though far from being large, are yet capable of raising ideas
of the sublime, because they are considered

as objects of terror. As ferpents and poifonous animals of almost all kinds. And to things of great dimensions, if we annex: an adventitious idea of terror, they become without comparison greater. A level plain of a vast extent on land, is certainly no mean idea; the prospect of such a plain may be as extensive as a prospect of the ocean; but can it ever fill the mind with any thing so great as the ocean itself? This is owing to several causes, but it is owing to none more than this, that this ocean is an object of no small terror. Indeed terror is in all cases whatsoever, either more openly or latently the ruling principle of the fublime. Several languages bear a strong testimony to the affinity of these ideas. They frequently use the same word, to fignify indifferently the modes of aftonishment or admiration and those of terror. Oaplos is in Greek either fear or wonder : Auro; is terrible or respectable; auto, to reverence or to fear. " Vereor in Latin, is what who is in Greek. The Romans usedthe verb fupeo, a term which strongly: marks the flate of an aftonished mind, to express the effect either of simple fear, or of .

of aftonishment; the word attonitus, (thunder-struck) is equally expressive of the alliance of these ideas; and do not the French etonnement, and the English astonishment and amazement point out as clearly the kindred emotions which attend sear and wonder? They who have a more general knowledge of languages, could produce, I make no doubt, many other and equally striking examples.

## SECT. III. OBSCURITY.

fourity t seems in general to be necessary. When we know the full extent of any danger, when we can accustom our eyes to it, a great deal of the apprehension vanishes. Every one will be sensible of this, who considers how greatly night adds to our dread, in all cases of danger, and how much the notions of ghosts and goblins, of which none can form clear ideas, affect minds, which give credit to the popular tales concerning such sorts of beings. Those

Those despotic governments, which are founded on the passions of men, and principally upon the passion of fear, keep their chief as much as may be from the public eye. The policy has been the same in many cases of religion. Almost all the heathen temples were dark. Even in the barbarous temples of the Americans at this day, they keep their idol in a dark part of the hut, which is confecrated to his worship. For this purpose too the Druids performed all their ceremonies in the bosom of the darkeft woods, and in the shade of the oldest and most spreading oaks. No person seems better to have understood the fecret of heightening, or of fetting terrible things, if I may use the expression, in their strongest light by the force of a judicious obscurity, than Milton. His description of Death in the fecond book is admirably fludied; it is aftonifning with what a gloomy pomp, with what a fignificant and expressive uncertainty of strokes and colouring he has finished the portrait of the king of terrors

The other shape,

If shape it might be called that shape had none,

Distin-

Distinguishable, in member, joint, or limb;
Or substance might be called that shadow seem'd,
For each seem'd either; black be stood as night;
Fierce as ten suries; terrible as bell;
And shook a deadly dart. What seem'd his head
The likeness of a kingly crown had on.

In this description all is dark, uncertain, confused, terrible, and sublime to the last degree.

#### SECT. IV.

Of the difference between CLEARNESS and OBSCURITY with regard to the passions.

I T is one thing to make an idea clear, and another to make it affecting to the imagination. If I make a drawing of a palace, or a temple, or a landscape, I present a very clear idea of those objects; but then (allowing for the effect of imitation which is something) my picture can at most affect only as the palace, temple, or landscape would have affected in the reality. On the other hand, the most lively and spirited verbal description I can give, raises a very obscure and impersect idea of such objects:

jects; but then it is in my power to raise a stronger emotion by the description than I could do by the best painting. This experience constantly evinces. The proper manner of conveying the affections of the mind from one to another, is by words: there is a great infufficiency in all other methods of communication; and fo far is a clearness of imagery from being absolutely necessary to an influence upon the passions, that they may be confiderably operated upon without presenting any image at all, by certain founds adapted to that purpose; of which we have a sufficient proof in the acknowledged and powerful effects of instrumental music. In reality a great clearness helps but little towards affecting the passions, as it is in some fort an enemy to all enthulialms what loever.

## SECT. [IV.] The same subject continued.

THERE are two verses in Horace's art of poetry that seem to contradict this opinion, for which reason I shall take a little more pains in clearing it up. The verses are,

Segnius irritant animos demissa per aures Quam quæ sunt oculis subjecta sidelibus.

On this the abbe du Bos founds a criticism, wherein he gives painting the preference to poetry in the article of moving the paffions; principally on account of the greater clearness of the ideas it represents. I believe this excellent judge was led into this mistake (if it be a mistake) by his system, to which he found it more conformable than I imagine it will be found to experience. I know feveral who admire and love painting, and yet who regard the objects of their admiration in that art, with coolness enough in comparison of that warmth with which they are animated by affecting pieces of poetry or rhetoric. Among the common fort of people, I never could perceive that painting had much influence on their passions. It is true that the best forts of painting, as well as the best forts of poetry. are not much understood in that sphere, But it is most certain, that their passions are very strongly rouzed by a fanatic preacher. or by the ballads of Chevy-chafe, or the children in the wood, and by other little popular

poems and tales that are current in that rank of life. I do not know of any paintings, bad or good, that produce the fame effect. So that poetry with all its obscurity, has a more general as well as a more powerful dominion over the passions than the other art. And I think there are reafons in nature why the obscure idea, when properly conveyed, should be more affecting than the clear. It is our ignorance of things that causes all our admiration, and chiefly excites our passions. Knowledge and acquaintance make the most striking causes affect but little. It is thus with the vulgar, and all men are as the vulgar in what they do not understand. The ideas of eternity, and infinity, are among the most affecting we have, and yet perhaps there is nothing of which we really understand so little, as of infinity and eternity. We do not any where meet a more sublime description than this justly celebrated one of Milton, wherein he gives the portrait of Satan with a dignity fo fuitable to the subject.

He above the reft

In shape and gesture proudly eminent
Stood like a tower; his form had yet not lost
All her original brightness, nor appear'd

Less than archangel ruin'd, and th' excess
Of glory obscur'd: as when the Sun new ris'n
Looks through the horizontal misty air
Shorn of his beams; or from behind the moon
In dim eclipse disastrous twilight sheds
On half the nations; and with sear of change
Perplexes monarchs.

Here is a very noble picture; and in what does this poetical picture confift? in images of a tower, an archangel, the fun rifing through mists, or in an eclipse, the ruin of monarchs, and the revolutions of kingdoms. The mind is hurried out of itself, by a croudof great and confused images; which affect because they are crouded and confused, For separate them, and you lose much of the greatness, and join them, and you infallibly loofe the clearness. The images raised by poetry are always of this obscure kind; though in general the effects of poetry, are by no means to be attributed to the images it raises; which point we shall examine more at large hereafter. \* But painting, when we have allowed for the pleasure of imitation, can only affect fimply by the images it presents; and even in painting a judicious obscurity in some things contributes to the effect of the picture; because the images in painting are exactly similar to those in nature; and in nature, dark, confused, uncertain images have a greater power on the fancy to form the grander passions than those have which are more clear and determinate. But where and when this observation may be applied to practice, and how far it shall be extended, will be better deduced from the nature of the subject, and from the occasion, than from any rules that can be given.

I am sensible that this idea has met with opposition and is likely still to be rejected by feveral. But let it be confidered that hardly any thing can strike the mind with its greatness, which does not make some fort of approach towards infinity; which nothing can do whilft we are able to perceive its bounds; but to see an object diftinctly, and to perceive its bounds, is one and the same thing. A clear idea is therefore another name for a little idea. There is a passage in the book of Job amazingly fublime, and this fublimity is principally due to the terrible uncertainty of the thing described. In thoughts from the visions of the

night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, fear came upon me and trembling, which made all my bones to sbake. Then a spirit passed before my face. The bair of my flesh stood up It food fill, but I could not discern the form thereof; an image was before mine eyes; there was filence; and I beard a voice, --- Shall mortal man be more just than God? We are first prepared with the utmost solemnity for the vision; we are first terrified, before we are let even into the obscure cause of our emotion; but when this grand cause of terror makes its appearance what is it? is it not, ... wrapt up in the shades of its own incomprehensible darkness, more aweful, more striking, more terrible, than the liveliest description, than the clearest painting could -possibly represent it? When painters have attempted to give us clear representations of these very fanciful and terrible ideas, they have I think almost always failed; infomuch that I have been at a loss, in all the pictures I have feen of hell, whether the painters did not intend fomething ludicrous. Several painters have handled a fubject of this kind with a view of affembling as many horrid phantoms as their imagination

I have chanced to meet of the temptations of St. Anthony, were rather a fort of odd, wild grotesques, than any thing capable of producing a serious passion. In all these subjects poetry is very happy. Its apparitions, its chimeras, its harpies, its allegorical figures, are grand and affecting; and though Virgil's Fame and Homer's Discord, are obscure, they are magnificent figures. These figures in painting would be clear enough, but I fear they would become ridiculous.

### SECT. V.

### POWER.

BESIDES these things which directly suggest the idea of danger, and those which produce a similar effect from a mechanical cause, I know of nothing sublime which is not some modification of power. And this branch rises, as naturally as the other two branches, from terror, the common stock of every thing that is sublime. The idea of power at first view, seems of the class of these indifferent ones, which may equally belong to pain or to pleasure.

But in reality the affection arising from the idea of vaft power, is extremely remote from that neutral character. For, first we must remember, \* that the idea of pain, in its highest degree, is much stronger than the highest degree of pleasure; and that it preserves the same superiority through all the subordinate gradations. From hence it is, that where the chances for equal degrees of fuffering or enjoyment are in any fort equal, the idea of suffering must always be prevalent. And indeed the ideas of pain, and, above all, of death, are so very affecting, that whilft we remain in the presence of whatever is supposed to have the power of inflicting either, it is impossible to be perfectly free from terror. Again, we know by experience, that for the enjoyment of pleasure, no great efforts of power are at all necessary; nay we know, that such efforts would go a great way towards destroying our satisfaction: for pleasure must be stolen, and not forced upon us; pleasure follows the will; and therefore we are generally affected with it by many things of a force greatly inferior to our own. But. pain

pain is always inflicted by a power in some way superior, because we never submit to pain willingly. So that strength, violence, pain and terror, are ideas that rush in upon the mind together. Look at a man, or any other animal of prodigious strength, and what is your idea before reflection? Is it that this strength will be subservient to you, to your ease, to your pleasure, to your interest in any sense? No; the emotion you feel is, left this enormous strength should be employed to the purpoles of \* rapine and destruction: That power derives all its fublimity from the terror with which it is generally accompanied, will appear evidently from its effect in the very few cases, in which it may be possible to strip a considerable degree of strength of its ability to hurt. When you do this you spoil it of every thing sublime, and it immediately becomes contemptible. An ox is a creature of vast strength; but he is an innocent creature, extremely serviceable, and not at all dangerous; for which reason the idea of an ox is by no means grand. A bull is strong too; but his strength is of another kind:

<sup>\*</sup> Vide Part 3. fect. 21.

kind; often very destructive, seldom (at least amongst us) of any use in our business; the idea of a bull is therefore great, and it has frequently a place in sublime descriptions, and elevating comparisons. Let us look at another ftrong animal in the two diffinct lights in which we may confider him. The horse in the light of a useful beaft, fit for the plough, the road, the draft, in every focial useful light the horse has nothing of the sublime; but is it thus that we are affected with him, whose neck is cloathed with thunder, the glory of whose nostrils is terrible, who swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage, neither believeth that it is the found of the trumpet? In this description the useful character of the horse entirely disappears, and the terrible and sublime blaze out together. We have continually about us animals of a strength that is considerable, but not pernicious. these we never look for the sublime: it comes upon us in the gloomy forest, and in the howling wilderness, in the form of the lion, the tiger, the panther, or rhinoceros. Whenever strength is only useful, and employed for our benefit or our pleafure, then it is never sublime; for nothing can. act agreeably to us, that does not act in conformity to our will; but to act agreeably to our will, it must be subject to us; and therefore can never be the cause of a grand and commanding conception. The description of the wild ass, in Job, is worked up into no small sublimity, merely by infifting on its freedom, and his fetting mankind at defiance; otherwise the description of such an animal could have had. nothing noble in it. Who bath loofed (fays he) the bands of the wild ass? whose bouse I bave made the wilderness, and the barren land bis dwellings. He scornetb the multitude of the city, neither regardeth be the voice of the driver. The range of the mountains is his pasture. The magnificent description of the unicorn and of leviathan in the same book, is full of the same heightening circumstances. Will the unicorn be willing to ferve thee? canst thou bind the unicorn with his band in the furrow? wilt thou trust him because bis strength is great? - Canst thou draw out leviathan with an book? will be make a covenant with thee? wilt thou take bim for a servant for ever? shall not one be cast down even at the sight of bim? In short, whereautobai mest artenida

wherefoever, we find strength, and in what light foever we look upon power, we shall all along observe the sublime the concomitant of terror, and contempt the attendant on a ftrength that is subservient and innoxious. The race of dogs in many of their kinds, have generally a competent degree of strength and swiftness; and they exert these, and other valuable qualities which they possess, greatly to our convenience and pleasure. Dogs are indeed the most focial, affectionate, and amiable animals of the whole brute creation; but love approches much nearer to contempt than is commonly imagined; and accordingly, though we carefs dogs, we borrow from them an appellation of the most despicable kind, when we employ terms of reproach; and this appellation is the common mark of the last vileness and contempt in eve-Wolves have not more ry language. ftrength than several species of dogs; but on account of their unmanageable fierceness, the idea of a wolf is not despicable; it is not excluded from grand descriptions and fimilitudes. Thus we are affected by strength, which is natural power. The power which arises from institution in kings

kings and commanders, has the fame connection with terror. Sovereigns are frequently addressed with the title of dread maielty. And it may be observed that young persons little acquainted with the world. and who have not been used to approach men in power are commonly ftruck with an awe which takes away the free use of their faculties. When I prepared my feat in the street (lays Job) the young men Jaw me, and bid themselves. Indeed, so natural is this timidity with regard to power, and fo firongly does it inhere in our conflitution. that very few are able to conquer it, but by mixing much in the buliness of the great world, or by using no small violence to their natural dispositions. I know some people are of opinion, that no awe, no degree of terror, accompanies the idea of power, and have hazarded to affirm, that we can contemplate the idea of God himfelf without any fuch emotion. I purposely avoided, when I first considered this subject, to introduce the idea of that great and tremenduous Being, as an example in an argument fo light as this; though it frequently occurred to me, not as an objection to, but as a strong confirmation of my notions in this

this matter. I hope, in what I am going to fay, I shall avoid presumption, where it is almost impossible for any mortal to speak with strict propriety. I say then that whilst we consider the Godhead merely as he is an object of the understanding, which forms a complex idea of power, wisdom, justice, goodness, all stretched to a degree far exceeding the bounds of our comprehension, whilst we consider the divinity in this refined and abstracted light, the imagination and passions are little or nothing affected. But because we are bound by the condition of our nature to ascend to these pure and intellectual ideas, through the medium of fensible images, and to judge of these divine qualities by their evident acts and exertions, it becomes extremely hard to difentangle our idea of the cause from the effect by which we are led to know it. Thus when we contemplate the Deity, his attributes and their operation coming united on the mind, form a fort of fentible image, and as such are capable of affecting the imagination. Now, though in a just idea of the Deity, perhaps none of his attributes are predominant, yet to our imagination, his

his power is by far the most striking. Some reflection, some comparing is necessary to fatisfy us of his wisdom, his justice, and his goodness; to be struck with his power, it is only necessary that we should open our eyes. But whilft we contemplate so vast an object, under the arm, as it were of almighty power, and invefted upon every fide with omnipresence, we fink into the minuteness of our own nature, and are, in a manner, annihilated before him. And though a confideration of his other attributes may relieve in fome measure our apprehensions; yet no conviction of the justice with which it is exercised, nor the mercy with which it is tempered, can wholly remove the terror that naturally arises from a force which nothing can withstand. If we rejoice, we rejoice with trembling; and even whilst we are receiving benefits we cannot but shudder at a power which can confer benefits of fuch mighty importance. When the prophet David contemplated the wonders of wisdom and power, which are displayed in the œconomy of man, he feems to be struck with a fort of divine horror, and cries out, fearfully and wonderfully am I made! An heathen

heathen poet has a sentiment of a similar nature; Horace looks upon it as the last effort of philosophical fortitude, to behold without terror and amazement, this immense and glorious fabric of the universe.

Hunc solem, et stellas, et decedentia certis Tempora momentis, sunt qui formidine nulla Imbuti spectant.

Lucretius is a poet not to be suspected of giving way to superstitious terrors; yet when he supposes the whole mechanism of nature laid open by the master of his philosophy, his transport on this magnificent view which he has represented in the colours of such bold and lively poetry, is overcast with a shade of secret dread and horror.

His tibi me rebus quædam Divina voluptas Percipit, atque borror, quod sic natura tua vi Tam manifesta patet ex omni parte retecta.

But the scripture alone can supply ideas answerable to the majesty of this subject. In the scripture, wherever God is represented as appearing or speaking, every thing terrible in nature is called up to heighten the awe and solemnity of the divine presence. The psalms, and the prophetical books, are crouded

crouded with instances of this kind. earth shook (says the Psalmist) the beavens also dropped at the presence of the Lord. And what is remarkable, the painting preserves the same character, not only when he is supposed descending to take vengeance upon the wicked, but even when he exerts the like plenitude of power in acts of beneficence to mankind. Tremble, theu earth! at the presence of the Lord; at the presence of the God of Jacob; which turned the rock into flanding water, the flint into a fountain of waters! It were endless to enumerate all the passages both in the sacred and profane writers, which establish the general sentiment of mankind, concerning the inseparable union of a facred and a reverential awe, with our ideas of the Divinity. Hence the common maxim, primos in orbe deos fecit timor. This maxim may be, as I believe it is, false with regard to the origin of religion. The maker of the maxim faw how inteparable these ideas were, without confidering that the notion of some great power must be always precedent to our dread of it. But this dread must necessarily follow

low the idea of such a power when it is once excited in the mind. It is on this principle that true religion has, and must have, so large a mixture of falutary fear; and that false religions have generally nothing else but fear to support them. Before the christian religion had, as it were, humanized the idea of the Divinity, and brought it fomewhat nearer to us, there was very little faid of the love of God. The followers of Plato have something of it, and only something. The other writers of pagan antiquity, whether poets or philosophers, nothing at all. And they who consider with what infinite attention, by what a difregard of every perishable object, through what long habits of piety and contemplation it is, that any man is able to attain an entire love and devotion to the Deity, will eafily perceive, that it is not the first, the most natural, and the most striking effect which proceeds from that idea. Thus we have traced power through its feveral gradations unto the highest of all, where our imagination is finally loft; and we find terror quite throughout the progress, its inseparable companion, and growing along with it, as far as we can possibly trace them. Now as power is undoubtdoubtedly a capital fource of the sublime, this will point out evidently from whence its energy is derived, and to what class of ideas we ought to unite it.

# SECT VI. PRIVATION.

A LL general privations are great, because they are all terrible; Vacuity,
Darkness, Solitude and Silence. With what
a fire of imagination, yet with what severity of judgment, has Virgil amassed all these
circumstances where he knows that all the
images of a tremendous dignity ought to
be united, at the mouth of hell! where before he unlocks the secrets of the great
deep, he seems to be seized with a religious horror, and to retire assonished at the
boldness of his own design.

Di, quibus imperium est animarum, umbræq; silentes, garant de de animarum, umbræq; silentes, garant de de animarum, umbræq; Et Chuos, et Phlegethon, loca nocte silentia late, Sit mibi sas audita loqui, sit numine vestro Pandere res alta terra et caligine mersas. Ibant obscuri, sola sub nocte, per umbram, Perque domos Ditis vacuas, et inania regna.

Te subterraneous gods! whose awful sway:
The gliding ghosts, and silent shades obey;
O Chaos boar! and Phlegethon prosound!
Whose solemn empire stretches wide around;
Give me, ye great tremendous powers, to tell
Of scenes and wonders in the depth of bell;
Give me your mighty secrets to display
From those black realms of darkness to the day:

PITT.

Obscure they went through dreary shades that led Along the waste dominions of the dead.

DRYDEN.

# VASTNESS.

5) 1grist (1119/ 1977)

GREATNESS t of dimension, is a powerful cause of the sublime. This is too evident, and the observation too common, to need any illustration; it is not so common, to consider in what ways greatness of dimension, vastness of extent, or quantity, has the most striking effect. For certainly, there are ways, and modes, wherein the same quantity of extension shall produce greater effects than it is found

komog Dirin vucuas, et idanik regu

to do in others. Extension is either in length, height, or depth. Of these the length strikes least; an hundred yards of even ground will never work fuch an effect as a tower an hundred yards high, or a rock or mountain of that altitude. I am apt to imagine likewise, that height is less grand than depth; and that we are more struck at looking down from a precipice, than at looking up at an object of equal height, but of that I am not very positive. A perpendicular has more force in forming the sublime, than an inclined plane; and the effects of a rugged and broken furface feem stronger than where it is smooth and polished. It would carry us out of our way to enter, in this place, into the cause of these appearances; but certain it is they afford a large and fruitful field of fpeculation. However, it may not be amise to add to these remarks upon magnitude, that, as the great extreme of dimension is sublime, so the last extreme of littleness is in fome measure sublime likewise; when we attend to the infinite divisibility of matter, when we pursue animal life into these exceffively small, and yet organized beings, F 5 that

that escape the nicest inquisition of the sense, when we push our discoveries yet downward, and consider those creatures so many degrees yet smaller, and the still diminishing scale of existence, in tracing which the imagination is lost as well as the sense, we become amazed and confounded at the wonders of minuteness; nor can we distinguish in its effect this extreme of littleness from the vast itself. For division must be infinite as well as addition; because the idea of a perfect unity can no more be arrived at, than that of a complete whole to which nothing may be added.

# SECT. VIII.

A NOTHER source of the sublime, is infinity; if it does not rather belong to the last. Infinity has a tendency to fill the mind with that sort of delightful horror, which is the most genuine effect, and truest test of the sublime. There are scarce any things which can become the objects of our senses that are really, and in their own nature infinite. But the eye not be-

things, they feem to be infinite, and they produce the same effects as if they were really so. We are deceived in the like manner, if the parts of some large object are so continued to any indefinite number, that the imagination meets no check which may hinder its extending them at pleasure.

Whenever we repeat any idea frequently, the mind by a fort of mechanism repeats it long after the first cause has ceased to operate\*. After whirling about; when we fit down, the objects about us still feem to whirl. After a long succession of noises, as the fall of waters, or the beating of forge hammers, the hammers beat and the water roars in the imagination long after the first sounds have ceased to affect it; and they die away at last by gradations which are scarcely perceptible. If you hold up a ftrait pole, with your eye to one end, it will feem extended to a length almost incredible t. Place a number of uniform and equidiftant marks on this pole, they will cause the same deception, and seem no soluquit me up i per i requent impultiplied i

<sup>\*</sup> Part 4. fect. 12.

multiplied without end. The senses strongly affected in some one manner, cannot quickly change their tenor, or adapt themselves to other things; but they continue in their old channel until the strength of the first mover decays. This is the reason of an appearance very frequent in madmen; that they remain whole days and nights,

that they remain whole days and nights, fometimes whole years, in the constant repetition of some remark, some complaint, or song; which having struck powerfully on their disordered imagination, in the beginning of their phrensy, every repetition reinforces it with new strength; and the hurry of their spirits, unrestrained by the curb of reason, continues it to the end of their lives.

### first sounds it is a decided of the standard o

#### SUCCESSION and UNIFORMITY.

Succession and uniformity of parts, are what constitute the artificial infinite. I. Succession; which is requisite that the parts may be continued so long, and in such a direction as by their frequent impulses on the sense to impress the imagination with

an idea of their progress beyond their actual limits. 2. Uniformity; because if the figures of the parts should be changed, the imagination at every change finds a check; you are presented at every alteration with the termination of one idea, and the beginning of another; by which means it becomes impossible to continue that uninterrupted progression, which alone can stamp on bounded objects the character of infinity. \* It is in this kind of artificial infinity, I believe, we ought to look for the cause why a rotund has such a noble effect. For in a rotund, whether it be a building or a plantation, you can no where fix a boundary; turn which way you will, the same object still seems to continue, and the imagination has no rest. But the parts must be uniform as well as circularly difposed, to give this figure its full force; because any difference, whether it be in the disposition, or in the figure, or even in the colour of the parts, is highly prejudicial to

<sup>\*</sup> Mr. Addison, in the spectators concerning the pleasures of the imagination, thinks it is, because in the rotund at one glance you see half the building. This I do not imagine to be the real cause.

the idea of infinity, which every change must check and interrupt, at every alteration commencing a new feries. On the fame principles of succession and uniformity, the grand appearance of the antient heathen temples, which were generally oblong forms, with a range of uniform pillars on every fide will be eafily accounted for. From the same cause also may be derived the grand effect of the ifles in many of our own old cathedrals. The form of a cross used in some churches seems to me not so eligible, as the parallelogram of the antients; at least I imagine it is not so proper for the outlide. For, supposing the arms of the cross every way equal, if you stand in a direction parallel to any of the fide walls, or colonnades, instead of a deception that makes the building more extended than it is, you are cut off from a considerable part (two thirds) of its actual length; and to prevent all possibility of progression, the arms of the cross taking a new direction, make a right angle with the beam, and thereby wholly turn the imagination from the repetition of the former idea. Or suppose the spectator placed

placed where he may take a direct view of. fuch a building; what will be the confequence? the necessary consequence will be, that a good part of the basis of each angle formed by the intersection of the arms of the cross, must be inevitably lost; the whole must of course assume a broken unconnected figure; the lights must be unequal, here strong, and there weak; without that noble gradation, which the perspective always effects on parts disposed uninterruptedly in a right line. Some or. all of these objections, will lie against every figure of a cross, in whatever view you take I exemplified them in the Greek cross in which these faults appear the most strongly; but they appear in some degree in all forts of croffes. Indeed there is nothing more prejudicial to the grandeur of buildings, than to abound in angles; a. fault obvious in many; and owing to an inordinate thirst for variety, which, whenever it prevails, is fure to leave very little true tafte.

the idea of infinity, which every change must check and interrupt, at every alteration commencing a new feries. On the fame principles of succession and uniformity, the grand appearance of the antient heathen temples, which were generally oblong forms, with a range of uniform pillars on every fide will be eafily accounted for. From the same cause also may be derived the grand effect of the ifles in many of our own old cathedrals. The form of a crofs used in some churches seems to me not so eligible, as the parallelogram of the antients; at least I imagine it is not so proper for the outlide. For, supposing the arms of the cross every way equal, if you stand in a direction parallel to any of the fide walls, or colonnades, instead of a deception that makes the building more extended than it is, you are cut off from a considerable part (two thirds) of its actual length; and to prevent all possibility of progression, the arms of the cross taking a new direction, make a right angle with the beam, and thereby wholly turn the imagination from the repetition of the former idea. Or suppose the spectator placed

placed where he may take a direct view of. fuch a building; what will be the confequence? the necessary consequence will be, that a good part of the basis of each angle formed by the intersection of the arms of the cross, must be inevitably lost: the whole must of course assume a broken unconnected figure; the lights must be unequal, here strong, and there weak; without that noble gradation, which the perspective always effects on parts disposed uninterruptedly in a right line. Some or all of these objections, will lie against every figure of a cross, in whatever view you take I exemplified them in the Greek cross in which these faults appear the most ftrongly; but they appear in some degree in all forts of croffes. Indeed there is nothing more prejudicial to the grandeur of buildings, than to abound in angles; a fault obvious in many; and owing to an inordinate thirst for variety, which, whenever it prevails, is fure to leave very little true tafte.

#### SECT. X.

Magnitude in BUILDING.

O the sublime in building, greatness : of dimension seems requisite; for on a few parts, and those small, the imagination cannot rife to any idea of infinity. No greatness in the manner can effectually compensate for the want of proper dimenfions. There is no danger of drawing men into extravagant defigns by this rule; it carries its own caution along with it. Because too great a length in building destroys the purpole of greatness which it was intended to promote; the perspective will lesfen it in height as it gains in length; and will bring it at last to a point; turning the whole figure into a fort of triangle, the poorest in its effect of almost any figure, that can be presented to the eye. I have ever observed, that colonnades and avenues of trees of a moderate length, were without comparison far grander, than when they were fuffered to run to immense distances, A true artist should put a generous deceit on the spectators, and effect the noblest defigns

figns by easy methods. Designs that are vast only by their dimensions, are always the sign of a common and low imagination. No work of art can be great, but as it deceives; to be otherwise is the prerogative of nature only. A good eye will fix the the medium betwixt an excessive length, or height, (for the same objection lies against both), and a short or broken quantity; and perhaps it might be ascertained to a tolerable degree of exactness, if it was my purpose to descend far into the particulars of any art.

## SECT. XI, INFINITY in pleasing OBJECTS.

INFINITY, though of another kind, causes much of our pleasure in agreeable, as well as of our delight in sublime images. The spring is the pleasantest of the seasons; and the young of most animals, though far from being completely sashioned, afford a more agreeable sensation than the full grown; because the imagination is entertained with the promise of something more, and does not acquiesce in

#### 114 On the SUBLIME

the present object of the sense. In unfinished sketches of drawing, I have often seen something which pleased me beyond the best finishing; and this I believe proceeds from the cause I have just now assigned.

# SECT. XII. DIFFICULTY.

A NOTHER source of greatness is Difficulty. When any work seems to have required immense force and labour to effect it, the idea is grand. Stone-henge, neither for disposition nor ornament, has any thing admirable; but those huge rude masses of stone, set on end, and piled on each other, turn the mind on the immense force necessary for such a work. Nay the rudeness of the work increases this cause of grandeur, as it excludes the idea of art, and contrivance; for dexterity produces another sort of effect which is different enough from this.

<sup>\*</sup> Part 4. fect. 4, 5, 6.

#### SECT. XII.

#### MAGNIFICENCE.

M'Agnificence is likewife a source of the sublime. A great profusion of things which are splendid or valuable in themselves, is magnificent. The starry heaven, though it occurs so very frequently to our view, never fails to excite an idea of grandeur. This cannot be owing to any thing in the stars themselves, separately considered. The number is certainly the cause. The apparent disorder augments the grandeur, for the appearance of care is highly contrary to our ideas of magnificence. Befides the stars lye in such apparent confufion, as makes it impossible on ordinary occasions to reckon them. This gives them the advantage of a fort of infinity. In works of art, this kind of grandeur, which consists in multitude, is to be very cautioully admitted; because, a profusion of excellent things is not to be attained, or with too much difficulty; and, because in many cases this splendid confusion would destroy all use, which should be attended to in most

of the works of art with the greatest care; besides it is to be considered, that unless you can produce an appearance of infinity by. your disorder, you will have disorder only without magnificence. There are however, a fort of fireworks, and fome other things, that in this way succeed well, and are truly grand. There are also many descriptions in the poets and orators which owe their fublimity to a richness and profusion of images, in which the mind is so dazled as to make it impossible to attend to that exact coherence and agreement of the allusions which we should require on every other occasion. I do not now remember a more striking example of this, than the description which is given of the king's army in the play of Henry the fourth;

All furnish'd, all in arms,

All plumed like Oftriches that with the wind!

Baited like eagles baving lately bathed:

As full of spirits as the month of May,

And gorgeous as the sun in Midsummer,

Wanton as youthful goats, wild as young bulls.

I saw young Harry with his beaver on

Rise from the ground like feather'd Mercury

And vaulted with such ease into his scat

As if an angel dropped from the clouds To turn and wind a fiery Pegasus.

In that excellent book so remarkable for the vivacity of its descriptions, as well as the solidity and penetration of its sentences, the wisdom of the son of Sirach, there is a noble panegyric on the high priest Simon the son of Onias; and it is a very fine example of the point before us.

How was be bonoured in the midst of the people, in his coming out of the sanctuary! He was as the morning star in the midst of a cloud and as the moon at the full; as the fun shining upon the temple of the Most High, and as the rainbow giving light in the bright clouds: and as the flowers of roses in the fpring of the year; as lilies by the rivers of waters, and as the frankincense tree in summer; as fire and incense in the censer; and as a vessel of gold set with precious stones; as . a fair clive tree budding forth fruit, and as a cypress which groweth up to the clouds. When be put on the robe of bonour, and was clothed with the perfection of glory, when he went up to the boly altar, he made the garment of boliness bonourable. He bimself stood by the hearth

bearth of the altar compassed with his brethren round about, as a young cedar in Libanus, and as palm trees compassed they him about. So were all the sons of Aaron in their glory, and the oblations of the Lord in their bands, &c.

### SECT. XIV.

#### LIGHT.

HAVING considered extension, so far as it is capable of raising ideas of greatness; colour comes next under consideration. All colours depend on light. Light therefore ought previously to be examined, and with it, its opposite, darkness. With regard to light, to make it a cause capable of producing the sublime, it must be attended with some circumstances, befides its bare faculty of shewing other objects. Mere light is too common a thing to make a strong impression on the mind, and without a strong impression nothing can be fublime. But fuch a light as that of the fun, immediately exerted on the eye, as it over-powers the fense, is a very great idea. Light of an inferior strength to this,

if it moves with great celerity, has the fame power; for lightning is certainly productive of grandeur, which it owes chiefly to the extreme velocity of its motion. A quick transition from light to darkness, or from darkness to light, has yet a greater effect. But darkness is more productive of fublime ideas than light. Our great poet was convinced of this; and indeed fo full was he of this idea, so entirely possessed with the power of a well-managed darkness, that, in describing the appearance of the Deity, amidst that profusion of magnificent images, which the grandeur of his subject provokes him to pour out upon every fide, he is far from forgetting the obscurity which furrounds the most incomprehensible of all beings, but,

- With the majesty of darkness round Gircles his throne.

And what is no less remarkable, our author had the secret of preserving this idea, even when he seemed to depart the sarthest from it, when he describes the light and glory which slows from the divine pre-

fence;

120 On the SUBLIME

fence; a light which by its very excess is converted into a species of darkness.

Dark with excessive bright thy fkirts appear.

Here is an idea not only poetical in an high degree, but strictly and philosophically just. Extreme light, by overcoming the organs of fight, obliterates all objects, fo as in its effect exactly to resemble darkness. After looking for some time at the sun, two black fpots, the impression which it leaves. feem to dance before our eyes. Thus are two ideas as opposite as can be imagined reconciled in the extremes of both; and both in spite of their opposite nature brought to concur in producing the fublime. And this is not the only instance wherein the opposite extremes operate equally in favour of the fublime, which in all things abhors mediocrity.

### SECT. XV.

Light in BUILDING.

A s the management of light is a matter of importance in architecture, it is worth enquiring, how far this remark is applicable plicable to building. I think then, that all edifices calculated to produce an idea of the sublime, ought rather to be dark and gloomy, and this for two reasons; the first is, that darkness itself on other occasions is known by experience to have a greater effect on the passions than light. The second is, that to make an object very firiking, we should make it as different as possible from the objects with which we have been immediately conversant; when therefore you enter a building, you cannot pais into a greater light than you had in the open air: to go into one some few degrees less luminous, can make only a trifling change; but to make the transition thoroughly striking. you ought to pass from the greatest light. to as much darkness as is consistent with the uses of architecture. At night the contrary rule will hold, but for the very same reason; and the more highly a room is then illuminated, the grander will the passion be. and edit or shall and graduites

This rule need not be yet in group

To sample degree of

#### SECT. XVI.

COLOUR confidered as productive of the SUBLIME.

A MONG colours, fuch as are fost, or cheerful, (except perhaps a strong red which is cheerful) are unfit to produce grand images. An immense mountain covered with a shining green turf, is nothing in this respect, to one dark and gloomy; the cloudy sky is more grand than the blue, and night more fublime and folemn than Therefore in historical painting, a gay or gaudy drapery, can never have a happy effect; and in buildings, when the highest degree of the sublime is intended, the materials and ornaments ought neither to be white, nor green, nor yellow, nor blue, nor of a pale red, nor violet, nor spotted, but of sad and fuscous colours, as black, or brown, or deep purple, and the Much of gilding, mosaics, painting or statues, contribute but little to the sub-This rule need not be put in practice, except where an uniform degree of the most striking sublimity is to be produced

ced, and that in every particular; for it ought to be observed, that this melancholy kind of greatness, though it be certainly the highest, ought not to be studied in all sorts of edifices, where yet grandeur must be studied; in such cases the sublimity must be drawn from the other sources; with a strict caution however against any thing light and riant; as nothing so effectually deadens the whole taste of the sublime.

# SECT. XVII. SOUND and LOUDNESS.

The eye is not the only organ of fenfation, by which a sublime passion
may be produced. Sounds have a great
power in these as in most other passions. I
do not mean words, because words do not
affect simply by their sounds, but by means
altogether different. Excessive loudness alone is sufficient to overpower the soul, to
suspend its action, and to fill it with terror.
The noise of vast cataracts, raging storms,
thunder, or artillery, awakes a great and
aweful sensation in the mind, though we

can observe no nicety or artifice in those forts of music. The shouting of multitudes has a similar effect; and by the sole strength of the sound, so amazes and confounds the imagination, that in this staggering, and hurry of the mind, the best established tempers can scarcely forbear being borne down, and joining in the common cry, and common resolution of the groud.

## SECT. XVIII. SUDDENNESS.

A Sudden beginning, or sudden cessation on of sound of any considerable force, has the same power. The attention is rouzed by this, and the faculties driven forward, as it were, on their guard. Whatever either in sights or sounds makes the transition from one extreme to the other easy, causes no terror, and consequently can be no cause of greatness. In every thing sudden and unexpected, we are apt to start; that is, we have a perception of danger, and our nature rouzes us to guard against it. It may be observed, that a single sound of some strength, though but of short duration

ration, if repeated after intervals, has a grand effect. Few things are more aweful than the striking of a great clock, when the silence of the night prevents the attention from being too much dissipated. The same may be said of a single stroke on a drum, repeated with pauses; and of the successive siring of cannon at a distance; all the effects mentioned in this section have causes very nearly alike.

#### SECT. XIX. INTERMITTING.

A LOW, tremulous, intermitting found, though it feems in some respects opposite to that just mentioned, is productive of the sublime. It is worth while to examine this a little. The fact itself must be determined by every man's own experience, and reflection. I have already observed, that \* night increases our terror more perhaps than any thing else; it is our nature, that, when we do not know what may happen to us, to fear the worst that can happen us; and hence it is, that un-

#### 126 On the SUBLIME

certainty is so terrible, that we often seek to be rid of it, at the hazard of a certain mischief. Now, some low, consused, uncertain sounds, leave us in the same searful anxiety concerning their causes, that no light, or an uncertain light does concerning the objects that surround us.

Quale per incertam Lunam sub luce maligna Est iter in silvis.—

-A faint shadow of uncertain light,
Like as a lamp, whose life doth fade away;
Or as the moon, cloathed with cloudy night,
Doth shew to him, who walks in fear and great
affright.

SPENCER.

Eat a light now appearing, and now leaving us, and so off and on, is even more terrible than total darkness: and a sort of uncertain sounds are, when the necessary dispositions concur, more alarming than a total silence. efublinge, aspini-

## T. XX. The cries of ANIMALS.

OUCH founds as imitate the natural inarticulate voices of men, or any animals in pain or danger, are capable of conveying great ideas; unless it be the well known voice of some creature, on which we are used to look with contempt. The angry tones of wild beafts are equally capable of cauling a great and aweful fensation.

Hinc exaudiri gemitus, iraque leonum Vincla recufantum, et sera sub nocle rudentum: Setigerique fues, atque in præsepibus urs Savire; ac forma magnorum alutare luporum.

It might seem that these modulations of found darry foline connection with the mature of the things they represent, and are not merely arbitrary; because the natural cries of all animals, even of those animals with whom we have not been acquainted. never fail to make themselves sufficiently understood; this cannot be said of language. The modifications of found, which egallag side at sold G. Angirolab emiliay

may be productive of the sublime, are almost infinite. Those I have mentioned, are only a few instances to shew, on what principle they are all built.

#### SECT. XXI.

SMELL and TASTE. BITTERS and STENCHES.

SMELLS, and Taftes, have some share too, in ideas of greatness; but it is a fmall one, weak in its nature, and confined in its operations. I shall only observe, that no smells or tastes can produce a grand senfation, except excessive bitters and intolerable stenches. It is true, that these affections of the smell and taste, when they are in their full force, and lean directly upon the fenfory, are simply painful, and accompanied with no fort of delight; but when they are moderated, as in a description or narrative, they become fources of the sublime as genuine as any other, and upon the very same principle of a moderated pain. " A cup of bitterness;" to drain the bitter "cup of fortune;" the bitter apples of So-" dom." These are all ideas suitable to a sublime description. Nor is this passage

of Virgil without sublimity, where the stench of the vapour in Albunea conspires so happily with the sacred horror and gloominess of that prophetic forest.

At rex, sollicitus monstris, oraeula Fauni, Fatidici genitoris, adit: lucosque sub alta Consulit Albunea; nemorum quæ maxima sacro Fonte sonat, sævamque exhalat opaca Mephitim.

In the fixth book, and in a very sublime description, the poisonous exhalation of Acheron is not forgot, nor does it at all disagree with the other images amongst which it is introduced.

Spelunca alta fuit, vastoque immanis biatu, Scrupea, tuta lacu nigro, nemorumque tenebris; Quam super baud ullæ poterant impunè volantes Tendere iter pennis; talis sese halitus atris Faucibus effundens supera ad convexa serebat.

I have added these examples, because some friends, for whose judgment I have great deference, were of opinion, that if the sentiment stood nakedly by itself, it would be subject at first view to burlesque and ridicule; but this I imagine would principally arise from considering the bitterness and

G 5

ftench :

stench in company with mean and contemptible ideas, with which it must be owned they are often united; fuch an union degrades the sublime in all other instances as well as in those. But it is one of the tests by which the sublimity of an image is to be tried, not whether it becomes mean when affociated with mean ideas; but whether, when united with images of an allowed grandeur, the whole compolition is supported with dignity. Things which are terrible are always great; but when things possess disagreeable qualities, or fuch as have indeed some degree of danger, but of a danger eafily overcome, they are merely odious, as toads and spiders.

### SECT. XXII. FEELING. PAIN.

F Feeling little more can be said than that the idea of bodily pain, in all the modes and degrees of labour, pain, anguish, torment, is productive of the sub-lime; and nothing else in this sense can produce it. I need not give here any fresh instances, as those given in the former secti-

ons abundantly illustrate a remark, that in reality wants only an attention to nature, to be made by every body.

Having thus run through the causes of the sublime with reference to all the senses, my first observation, (sect. 7.) will be found very nearly true; that the sublime is an idea belonging to self-preservation. That it is therefore one of the most affecting we have. That its strongest emotion is an emotion of distress, and that no t pleasure from a positive cause belongs to it. Numberless examples besides those mentioned, might be brought in support of these truths, and many perhaps useful consequences drawn from them.

Sed fugit interea, fugit irreparabile tempus, ... Singula dum capti circumdettamur amore.

+ Vide fect. 6. part 1.

ins allege streets at the land of the lite.

to talk of boats y in a figurative promote that

ir is, confiftent with it. Her previous it we made take a direct content of the reality mants only an autoption

# Philosophical Enquiry

INTOTHE

ORIGIN OF OUR IDEAS

OF THE

Sublime and Beautiful.

PART III.

SECT. I.

OF BEAUTY.

It is my design to consider beauty as distinguished from the sublime; and in the course of the enquiry, to examine how far it is consistent with it. But previous to this, we must take a short review of the opinions already entertained of this quality; which I think are hardly to be reduced to any fixed principles; because men are used to talk of beauty in a figurative manner, that

is to fay, in a manner extremely uncertain, and indeterminate. By beauty I mean, that quality or those qualities in bodies bywhich they cause love, or some passion fimilar to it. I confine this definition to the merely sensible qualities of things, for the fake of preserving the utmost simplicity in a subject which must always distract us, whenever we take in those various causes of sympathy which attach us to any persons or things from secondary confiderations, and not from the direct force which they have merely on being viewed. I likewise distinguish love, by which I mean that fatisfaction which arifes to the mind upon contemplating any thing beautiful, of what soever nature it may be, from defire or luft; which is an energy of the mind, that hurries us on to the possession of certain objects, that do not affect us as they are beautiful, but by means altogether different. We shall have a strong defire for a woman of no remarkable beauty; whilft the greatest beauty in men, or in other animals, though it causes love, yet excites nothing at all of defire. Which shews that beauty and the passion caused by beauty, which I call love, is different from defire, though

#### On the SUBLIME

though defire may sometimes operate along with it; but it is to this latter that we must attribute those violent and tempestuous passions, and the consequent emotions of the body which attend what is called love in some of its ordinary acceptations, and not to the effects of beauty merely as it is such.

#### SECT. II.

Proportion not the cause of BEAUTY in VEGETABLES.

BEAUTY hath usually been said to consist in certain proportions of parts. On considering the matter, I have great reason to doubt, whether beauty be at all an idea belonging to proportion. Proportion relates almost wholly to convenience, as every idea of order seems to do; and it must therefore be considered as a creature of the understanding, rather than a primary cause acting on the senses and imagination. It is not by the force of long attention and enquiry that we find any object to be beautiful; beauty demands no affishance from our reasoning; even the will

is unconcerned; the appearance of beauty as effectually causes some degree of love in us, as the application of ice or fire produces the ideas of heat or cold. To gain fomething like a fatisfactory conclusion in this point, it were well to examine, what proportion is; fince feveral who make use of that word, do not always feem to understand very clearly the force of the term. nor to have very distinct ideas concerning the thing itself. Proportion is the measureof relative quantity. Since all quantity is divisible, it is evident that every distinct part into which any quantity is divided, must bear some relation to the other parts or to the whole. These relations give an origin to the idea of proportion. They are discovered by mensuration, and they are the objects of mathematical enquiry. But whether any part of any determinate quantity be a fourth, or a fifth, or a fixth, or a moiety of the whole; or whether it be of equal length with any other part, or double its length, or but one half, is a matter merely indifferent to the mind; it stands neutral in the question; and it is from this absolute indifference and tranquillity of the mind.

mind; that mathematical speculations derive some of their most considerable advantages; because there is nothing to interest the imagination; because the judgment fits free and unbiaffed to examine the point. All proportions, every arrangement of quantity is alike to the understanding, because the same truths result to it from all; from greater, from leffer; from equality and inequality. But furely beauty is no idea belonging to mensuration; nor has it any thing to do with calculation and geometry. If it had, we might then point out some certain measures which we. could demonstrate to be beautiful, either as fimply confidered, or as related to others; and we could call in those natural objects, for whose beauty we have no voucher but the sense, to this happy standard, and confirm the voice of our passions by the determination of our reason. But since we have not this help, let us fee whether proportion can in any sense be considered as the cause of beauty, as hath been so generally, and by fome so confidently affirmed. If proportion be one of the constituents of beauty, it must derive that power either

either from some natural properties inherent in certain measures, which operate mechanically; from the operation of cuftom; or from the fitness which some meafures have to answer some particular ends of conveniency. Our business therefore isto enquire, whether the parts of those objects which are found beautiful in the vegetable or animal kingdoms, are constantly fo formed according to fuch certain meafures, as may ferve to fatisfy us that their beauty refults from those measures, on the principle of a natural mechanical cause; or from custom; or in fine, from their fitness . for any determinate purposes. I intend to examine this point under each of these heads in their order. But before I proceed further, I hope it will not be thought amis, if I lay down the rules which governed me in this enquiry, and which have misled me in it, if I have gone aftray. 1. If two bodies produce the same or a similar effect on the mind, and on examination they are found to agree in some of their properties, and to differ in others; the common effect is to be attributed to the properties in which they agree, and not to those in which

they differ. 2. Not to account for the effect of a natural object from the effect of an artificial object. 3. Not to account for the effect of any natural object from a conclusion of our reason concerning its uses, if a natural cause may be assigned. 4 Not to admit any determinate quantity, or any relation of quantity, as the cause of a certain effect, if the effect is produced by different or opposite measures and relations; or if these measures and relations may exist, and yet the effect may not be produced. These are the rules which I have chiefly followed, whilft I examined into the power of proportion confidered as a natural cause; and these, if he thinks them just, I request the reader to carry with him throughout the following discussions whill we enquire in the find place, in what things we find this quality of beauty; next, to fee whether in thefe, we can find any affignable proportions, in such a manner asought to convince us, that our idea of beauty refults from them. We shall confider this pleafing power, at it appears in vegetables, in the inferior animals, and in man. Turning our eyes to the vegetable creation.

creation, we find nothing there so beautiful as flowers; but flowers are almost of every fort of shape, and of every fort of disposition; they are turned and fashioned into an infinite variety of forms; and from these forms, botanists have given them their names, which are almost as various. What proportion do we discover between the stalks and the leaves of flowers, or between the leaves and the piftils? How does the slender stalk of the rose agree with the bulkey head under which it bends? but the rose is a beautiful flower; and can we undertake to fay that it does not owe a great deal of its beauty even to that disproportion? the rose is a large flower, yet it grows upon a small shrub; the flower of the apple is very fmall, and it grows upon a large tree; yet the role and the apple blossom are both beautiful, and the plants that bear them are most engagingly attired not withstanding this disproportion. What by general confent is allowed to be a more beautiful object than an orange tree, flourishing at once with its leaves, its blossoms, and its fruit? but it is in vain that we fearch here for any proportion between the height,

height, the breadth, or any thing else concerning the dimensions of the whole, or concerning the relation of the particular parts to each other. I grant that we may observe in many flowers, something of a regular figure, and of a methodical dispofition of the leaves. The rose has such a figure and fuch a disposition of its petals; but in an oblique view, when this figure is in a good measure lost, and the order of rhe leaves confounded, it yet retains its beauty; the rose is even more beautiful before it is full blown; and the bud before this exact figure is formed; and this is not the only inftance wherein method and exactness, the foul of proportion, are found rather prejudicial than ferviceable to the cause of beauty.

#### SECT. III.

Proportion not the cause of BEAUTY in ANIMALS.

HAT proportion has but a small share in the formation of beauty, is full as evident among animals. Here the greatest variety of shapes, and dispositions of parts are well fitted to excite this idea. The fwan,

Iwan, confessedly a beautiful bird, has a neck longer than the rest of his body, and but a very short tail; is this a beautiful proportion? we must allow that it is. But then what shall we say to the peacock, who has comparatively but a short neck, with a tail longer than the neck and the rest of the body taken together? How many birds are there that vary infinitely from each of these standards, and from every other which you can fix, with proportions different, and often directly opposite to each other! and yet many of these birds are extremely beautiful; when upon confidering them we find nothing in any one part that might determine us a priori, to fay what the others ought to be, nor indeed to guess any thing about them, but what experience might shew to be full of disappointment and mistake. And with regard to the colours, either of birds or flowers, for there is fomething fimilar in the colouring of both, whether they are confidered in their extension or gradation, there is nothing of proportion to be observed. Some are of but one fingle colour; others have all the colours of the rainbow; some are of the pri-

mary colours; others are of the mixt; in short, an attentive observer may soon conclude, that there is as little of proportion in the colouring as in the shapes of these objects. Turn next to beafts; examine the head of a beautiful horse; find what proportion that bears to his body, and to his limbs, and what relation these have to each other; and when you have fettled these proportions as a standard of beauty, then take a dog or cat, or any other animal, and examine how far the same proportions between their heads and their necks, between those and the body, and so on, are found to hold; I think we may fafely fay, that they differ in every species, yet that there are individuals found in a great many species so differing, that have a very striking beauty. Now if it be allowed that very different, and even contrary forms and difpositions are consistent with beauty, it amounts I believe to a concession, that no certain measures operating from a natural principle, are necessary to produce it; at least fo far as the brute species is concerned.

#### SECT. IV.

Proportion not the cause of BEAUTY in the human species.

THERE are some parts of the human body, that are observed to hold certain proportions to each other; but before it can be proved, that the efficient cause of beauty lies in these, it must be fhewn, that wherever these are found exact, the person to whom they belong is beautiful. I mean in the effect produced on the view, either of any member diftinctly confidered, or of the whole body together. It must be likewise shewn, that these parts stand in such a relation to each other, that the comparison between themmay be easily made, and that the affection of the mind may naturally refult from it. For my part, I have at several times very carefully examined many of those proportions, and found them hold very nearly, or altogether alike in many subjects, which were not only very different from one another, but where one has been very beautiful, and the other very remote from beauty. With regard to the parts which are found

#### 144 On the SUBLIME

found so proportioned, they are often so remote from each other, in lituation, nature, and office, that I cannot fee how they admit of any comparison, nor consequently how any effect owing to proportion can refult from them. The neck, fay they, in beautiful bodies should measure with the calf of the leg; it should likewise be twice the circumference of the wrift. And an infinity of observations of this kind are to be found in the writings, and conversations of many. But what relation has the calf of the leg to the neck; or either of these parts to the wrist? These proportions are certainly to be found in handsome bodies. are as certainly in ugly ones, as any who will take the pains to try, may find. Nay I do not know but they may be least perfect in some of the most beautiful. may affign any proportions you please to every part of the human body; and I undertake, that a painter shall religiously obferve them all, and notwithstanding produce if he pleases a very ugly figure. The same painter shall considerably deviate from these proportions, and produce a very beautiful, one. And indeed it may be observed

in the master-pieces of the antient and modern statuary, that several of them differ very widely from the proportions of others, in parts very confpicuous, and of great confideration; and that they differ no less from the proportions we find in living men, of forms extremely firiking and agreeable. And after all, how are the partizans of proportional beauty agreed amongst themselves about the proportions of the human body? some hold it to be feven heads; some make it eight, whilft others extend it even to ten; a vast difference in fuch a small number of divisions! Others take other methods of estimating the proportions, and all with equal fuccefs. But are these proportions exactly the same in all handsome men? or are they at all the proportions found in beautiful women? nobody will fay that they are; yet both fexes are undoubtedly capable of beauty, and the female of the greatest; which advantage I believe will hardly be attributed to the fuperior exactness of proportion in the fair fex. Let us rest a moment on this point; and confider how much difference there is between the measures that prevail in many fimilar parts of the body, in the two fexes

H

of this fingle species only. If you affigu any determinate proportions to the limbs of a man, and if you limit human beauty to these proportions, when you find a woman who differs in the make and measures of almost every part, you may conclude her not to be beautiful in spite of the suggestions of your imagination; or in obedience to your imagination you must renounce your rules; you must lay by the scale and compass, and look out for some other cause of beauty. For if beauty be attached to certain measures which operate from a principle in nature, why should similar parts with different measures of proportion be found to have beauty, and this too in the very fame species? But to open our view a little, it is worth observing, that almost all animals have parts of very much the same nature, and destined nearly to the same purposes; an head, neck, body, feet, eyes, ears, nose and mouth; yet providence, to provide in the best manner for their several wants, and to display the riches of his wisdom and goodness in his creation, has worked out of these few and similar organs, and members, a diversity hardly short of infinity in their disposition, measures, and relation. But, as we have before observed, amidst

amidst this infinite diversity, one particular is common to many species; several of the individuals which compose them, are capas ble of affecting us with a fense of loveliness; and whilst they agree in producing this effect, they differ extremely in the relative measures of those parts which have produced it. These considerations were fufficient to induce me to reject the notion of any particular proportions that operated by nature to produce a pleasing effect; but those who will agree with me with regard to a particular proportion, are strongly prepossessed in favour of one more indefinite. They imagine, that although beauty in general is annexed to no certain measures common to the feveral kinds of pleafing plants and animals; yet that there is a certain proportion in each species absolutely effential to the beauty of that particular kind. If we consider the animal world in general, we find beauty confined to no certain measures; but as some peculiar meafure and relation of parts, is what diftinguifhes each peculiar class of animals, it must of necessity be, that the beautiful in each kind will be found in the measures

0

is

as

s,

of nd ed, dft

and proportions of that kind; for otherwife it would deviate from its proper species, and become in forme fort monftrous: however, no fpecies is fo firictly confined to any certain proportions, that there is not a confiderable variation amongst the individuals; and as it has been thewn of the human, fo it may be fhewn of the brute kinds, that beauty is found indifferently in all the proportions which each kind can admit, without quitting its common form; and it is this idea of a common form that makes the proportion of parts at all regarded, and not the operation of any natural cause; indeed a little confideration will make it appear that it is not the measure but manner, that creates all the beauty which belongs to shape. What lights do we borrow from these boatted proportions, when we fludy ornamental delign? It feems amazing to me, that artifts, if they were as well convinced as they pretend to be, that proportion is a principal cause of beauty, have not by them at all times accurate measurements of all forts of beautiful animals to help them to proper proportions when they would contrive any thing elegant, gant, especially as they frequently affert, that it is from an observation of the beautiful in nature they direct their practice. I know that it has been faid long fince, and ecchoed backward and forward from one writer to another a thousand times, that the proportions of building have been taken from those of the human body. To make this forced analogy complete, they reprefent a man with his arms raifed and extended at full length, and then describe a fort of iquare, as it is formed by paffing lines along the extremities of this strange figure. But it appears very clearly to me. that the human figure never supplied the architect with any of his ideas. For in the first place men are very rarely feen in this. ftrained posture; it is not natural to them neither is it at all becoming. Secondly, the view of the human figure fo disposed, does not naturally (oggest the idea of a square, but rather of a crofs; as that large space between the arms and the ground, must be filled with fomething before it can make any person think of a fquare. Thirdly, feveral buildings are by no means of the form of that particular fquare, which are notmake withstand .

1

C

y

o

5,

ns

as

at

ty,

ate

m-

ons

ele-

ant,

withstanding planned by the best architects, and produce an effect altogether as good, and perhaps a better. And certainly nothing could be more unaccountably whimfical, than for an architect to model his performance by the human figure, fince no two things can have less resemblance or analogy, than a man, and an house or temple; do we need to observe, that their purposes are entirely different? What I am apt to suspect is this: that these analogies were devised to give a credit to the works. of art, by shewing a conformity between them and the noblest works in nature, not that the latter ferved at all to supply hints for the perfection of the former. And L am the more fully convinced, that the patrons of proportion have transferred their artificial ideas of nature, and not borrowed: from thence the proportions they use in works of art; because in any discussion of this subject, they always quit as soon as possible the open field of natural beauties, the animal and vegetable kingdoms, and fortify themselves within the artificial lines. and angles of architecture. For there is in mankind an unfortunate propenlity to, make withfand

make themselves, their views and their works, the measure of excellence in every thing whatsoever. Therefore having obferved that their dwellings were most commodious and firm when they were thrown into regular figures, with parts answerable to each other; they transferred their ideas to their gardens; they turned their trees into pillars, pyramids, and obelisks; they formed their hedges into fo many green walls, and fashioned the walks into squares, triangles, and other mathematical figures, with exactness and symmetry; and they thought if they were not imitating, they were at least improving nature, and teaching her to know her business. But nature has at last escaped from their discipline and their fetters; and our gardens, if nothing else, declare, we begin to feel that mathematical ideas are not the true measures of beauty. And furely they are full as little fo in the animal, as the vegetable world. For is it not extraordinary, that in these fine descriptive pieces, these innumerable odes and elegies, which are in the mouths of all the world, and many of which have been the entertainment of ages, that in thefe H 4

these pieces which describe love with such a passionate energy, and represent its object in such an infinite variety of lights, not one word is faid of proportion, if it be what fome infift it is, the principle component of beauty; whilft at the same time, several other qualities are very frequently and warmly mentioned? But if proportion has not this power, it may appear odd how men came originally to be prepoffeffed in its favour. It arose, I imagine, from the fondness I have just mentioned, which men bear so remarkably to their own works and notions; it arose from falle reasonings on the effects of the customary figure of animals; it arose from the Platonic theory of fitness and aptitude. For which reason in the next fection, I shall consider the effects of custom in the figure of animals; and afterwards the idea of fitness; fince if proportion does not operate by a natural power attending some measures, it must be either by custom, or the idea of utility; there is no other way.

### zi on with a SECTI TV out to regulate

# deformed in that part, because menor

FI am not miltaken, a great deal of the prejudice in fayour of proportion has arifen, not fo much from the observation of any certain measures found in beautiful bodies, as from a wrong idea of the relation which deformity bears to beauty, to which it has been confidered as the oppolite; on this principle it was concluded, that where the causes of deformity were removed, beauty must naturally and necessarily be introduced. This I believe is a mistake. For deformity is opposed, not to beauty, but to the complete, common form. If one of the legs of a man be found shorter than the other, the man is deformed; because there is something wanting to complete the whole idea we form of a man: and this has the same effect in natural faults, as maiming and mutilation produce: from accidents. So if the back be humped, the man is deformed; because his back has an unufual figure, and what carries with it the idea of some disease or misfor-H.5; tune:

tune; so if a man's neck be considerably longer or shorter than usual, we say he is deformed in that part, because men are not commonly made in that manner. But furely every hours experience may convinceus, that a man may have his legs of an equal length, and refembling each other in all respects, and his neck of a just fize, and his back quite strait, without having at the fame time the least perceivable beauty. Indeed beauty is fo far from belonging to the idea of custom, that in reality what affects us in that manner is extremely rare and uncommon. The beautiful strikes us as much by its novelty as the deformed itfelf. It is thus in those species of animals with which we are acquainted; and if one of a new species were presented, we should by no means wait until custom had settled an idea of proportion before we decided concerning its beauty or ugliness. Which fhews that the general idea of beauty, can be no more owing to customary than to natural proportion. Deformity arises from the want of the common proportions; but the necessary result of their existence in any object is not beauty. If we suppose proportion .

tion in natural things to be relative to cuftom and use, the nature of use and custom will shew, that beauty, which is a positive and powerful quality, cannot refult from it. We are so wonderfully formed, that whilft we are creatures vehemently desirous of novelty, we are as strongly attached to habit and custom. But it is the nature of things which holds us by cuftom to affect us very little whilft we are in possession of them, but strongly when they are absent. I remember to have frequented a certain place every day for a long time together; and I may truly fay, that fo far from finding pleasure in it, I was affected with a fort of weariness and disgust; I came, I went, I returned without pleasure, yet if by any means I passed by the usual time of my going thither, I was remarkably uneafy, . and was not quiet till I had got into my old track. They who use snuff take it almost without being sensible that they take it, and the acute sense of smell is deadened, fo as to feel hardly any thing from fo sharp a stimulus, yet deprive the snufftaker of his box, and he is the most uneasy mortal in the world. Indeed fo far are ufe :

use and habit from being causes of pleas fure, merely as such; that the effect of constant use is to make all things of whateverkind entirely unaffecting. For as use at last takes off the painful effects of many. things, it reduces the pleasurable effect of others in the same manner, and brings. both to a fort of mediocrity and indifference. Very justly is use called a second nature; and our natural and common state is one of absolute indifference, equally prepared for pain or pleafure. But when we are thrown out of this. state, or deprived of any thing requisite to. maintain us in it; when this chance does. not happen by pleasure from some mechanical cause, we are always hurt. It is so, with the second nature, custom, in all things which relate to it. Thus the want of the usual proportions in men and other animals is fure to difgust, though their. presence is by no means any cause of real pleasure. It is true, that the proportions laid down as causes of beauty in the human body are frequently found in beautiful ones, because they are generally found in all mankind; but if it can be shewn too that they are found without beauty, and that:

that beauty frequently exists without them, and that this beauty, where it exists, always can be assigned to other less equivocal causes, it will naturally lead us to conclude, that proportion and beauty are not ideas of the same nature. The true opposite to beauty is not disproportion or deformity, but ugliness; and as it proceeds from causes opposite to those of positive beauty, we cannot consider it until we come to treat of that. Between beauty and ugliness there is a sort of mediocrity, in which the assigned proportions are most commonly found, but this has no effect upon the passions.

#### SECT. VI.

PITNESS not the cause of BEAUTY.

part being well adapted to answer its end, is the cause of beauty, or indeed beauty itself. If it were not for this opinion, it had been impossible for the doctrine of proportion to have held its ground very long; the world would be soon weary of hearing of measures which related to nothing, either of a natural principle, or of a strucks to answer some end; the idea which mankind

mankind most commonly conceive of proportion, is the fuitableness of means to certain ends, and where this is not the question, very seldom trouble themselves a about the effect of different measures of things. Therefore it was necessary for this theory to infift, that not only artificial, but natural objects took their beauty from the fitness of their parts for their several purpoles. But in framing this theory, I am apprehensive that experience was not sufficiently consulted. For on that principle. the wedge-like frout of a fwine, with its tough cartilage at the end, the little funk eyes, and the whole make of the head, fo well adapted to its offices of digging, and rooting, would be extremely beautiful. The great bag hanging to the bill of a pelican, a thing highly useful to this animal, would be likewise as beautiful in our eyes. The hedgehog, fo well fecured against all affaults by his prickly hide, and the porcupine with his missile quills, would be then confidered as creatures of no small elegance. There are few animals, whose parts s are better contrived than those of a monkey; he has the hands of a man, joined to the :

the springy limbs of a beast; he is admirably calculated for running, leaping, grap-... pling, and climbing; and yet there are few animals which feem to have less beauty in the eyes of all mankind. I need fay little on the trunk of the elephant, of fuch . various usefulness, and which is so far from contributing to his beauty. How well fitted is the wolf for running and leaping? how admirably is the lion armed for battle? But will any one therefore call the elephant, the wolf, and the lion, beautiful animals? I believe nobody, will think the form of a man's legs to well adapted to running, as those of an horse, a dog, a deer, and several other creatures; at least they have not that appearance; yet I believe a well-fashioned human leg will be allowed far to exceed all these in beauty. If the fitness of parts was what constituted the loveliness of their form, the actual employment of them would undoubtedly much augment it; but this, though it is sometimes so upon another principle, is far from being always the case. A bird on the wing is not fo beautiful as when it is perched; nay, there are several of the domestic fowls which

which are feldom feen to fly, and which are nothing the less beautiful on that occount; yet birds are so extremely different in their form from the beaft and human kinds, that you cannot on the principle of fitness allow them any thing agreeable, but in confideration of their parts being defigned for quite other purpoles. I never in my. life chanced to fee a peacock fly; and yet before, very long before I confidered any aptitude in his form for the aerial life, I was ftruck with the extreme beauty which raises that bird above many of the best flying fowls in the world; though for any. thing I faw, his way of living was much like that of the fwine, which fed in the farm-yard along with him. The same may. be faid of cocks, hens, and the like; they are of the flying kind in figure; in their manner of moving not very different from men and beafts. To leave these foreign: examples; if beauty in our own species was annexed to use, men would be much more lovely than women; and strength and agility would be confidered as the only beauties. But to call strength by the name of beauty, to have but one denomination for: thee

the qualities of a Venus and Hercules, fo totally different in almost all respects, is furely a strange confusion of ideas, or abuse of words. The cause of this confusion, I imagine, proceeds from our frequently perceiving the parts of the human and other animal bodies to be at once very beautiful. and very well adapted to their purpofes : and we are deceived by a fophism, which makes us take that for a cause which is only a concomitant; this is the fophism of the fly; who imagined he raifed a great dust, because he stood upon the chariot. that really raised it. The stomach, thelungs, the liver, as well as other parts, are: incomparably well adapted to their purpoles; yet they are far from having any Again, many things are very beautiful, in which it is impossible to difcern any idea of use. And I appeal to the first and most natural feelings of mankind, whether on beholding a beautiful eye, or a well-fashioned mouth, or a well turned leg, any ideas of their being well fitted for feeing, eating, or running, ever present themselves. What idea of use is it that flowers. excite, the most beautiful part of the vegetablewife and good Creator has of his bounty, frequently joined beauty to those things which he has made useful to us; but this does not prove that an idea of use and beauty are the same thing, or that they are any way dependent on each other.

# SECT VIL

THEN I excluded proportion and fitness from any share in beauty, I did not by any means intend to fay that: they were of no value, or that they ought. to be difregarded in works of art. Works of art are the proper sphere of their power; and here it is that they have their full effect. Whenever the wildom of our Creator intended that we should be affected with any thing, he did not confine the execution of his delign to the languid and precarious operation of our reason; but he endued it with powers and properties that prevent the understanding, and even the will, which feizing upon the fenfes and imagination, captivate the foul before the under-

understanding is ready either to join with them or to oppose them. It is by a long deduction and much fludy that we difcover the adorable wisdom of God in his works: when we discover it, the effect is very different, not only in the manner of acquiring it, but in its own nature, from that which strikes us without any preparation from the fublime or the heautiful. How different is the satisfaction of an anatomist. who discovers the use of the muscles and of the skin, the excellent contrivance of the one for the various movements of thebody, and the wonderful texture of the other, at once a general covering, and at once a general outlet as well as inlet; how different is this from the affection which possesses an ordinary man at the fight of a delicate fmooth skin, and all the other parts of beauty which require no investigation to be perceived? In the former case, whilst we look up to the Maker with admiration. and praise, the object which causes it, may be odious and distasteful; the latter very often fo touches us by its power on the imagination, that we examine but little into the artifice of its contrivance; and we have.

have need of a strong effort of our reason to difentangle our minds from the allure, ments of the object to a confideration of that wisdom which invented so powerful a machine. The effect of proportion and fitness, at least so far as they proceed from a mere consideration of the work itself, produce approbation, the acquiescence of the understanding, but not love, nor any pasfion of that species. When we examine the structure of a watch, when we come to know thoroughly the use of every part of it, satisfied as we are with the fitness of the whole, we are far enough from perceiving any thing like beauty in the watchwork itself; but let us look on the case, the labour of some curious artist in engraving, with little or no idea of use, we shall have a much livelier idea of beauty than we ever could have had from the watch itself, though the master-piece of Graham. In beauty, as I said, the effect is previous to any knowledge of the use; but to judge of proportion, we must know the end for which any work is defigned. According to the end the proportion varies. Thus there is one proportion of a tower, another of

of an house; one proportion of a gallery, another of an hall, another of a chamber. To judge of the proportions of these, you must be first acquainted with the purposes for which they were deligned. Good sense and experience acting together, find out what is fit to be done in every work of art. We are rational creatures, and in all our works we ought to regard their end and purpole; the gratification of any palfion, how innocent foever, ought only to be of secondary consideration. Herein is placed the real power of fitness and proportion; they operate on the understanding confidering them, which approves the work and acquiefees in it. The passions, and the imagination which principally raifes them, have here very little to do. When a room appears in its original nakedness, bare walls and a plain cieling; let its proportion be ever so excellent, it pleases very little; a cold approbation is the utmost we can reach; a much worse proportioned room, with elegant mouldings and fine festoons, glasses, and other merely ornamental furniture, will make the imagination revolt against the reason; it will please much

much more than the naked proportion of the first room which the understanding has so much approved, as admirably fitted for its purposes. What I have here said and before concerning proportion, is by no means to persuade people absurdly to neglect the idea of use in the works of art. It is only to shew that these excellent things, beauty and proportion, are not the same; not that they should either of them be disregarded.

## SECT. VIII. The RECAPITULATION.

On the whole; if such parts in human bodies as are found proportioned, were likewise constantly found beautiful, as they certainly are not; or if they were so situated, as that a pleasure might flow from the comparison, which they seldom are; or if any assignable proportions were found, either in plants or animals, which were always attended with beauty, which never was the case; or if, where parts were well adapted to their purposes, they were constantly beautiful, and when no use appeared there was no beauty, which is contrary

contrary to all experience; we might conclude, that beauty confifted in proportion or utility. But fince, in all respects, the case is quite otherwise; we may be satisfied, that beauty does not depend on these, let it owe its origin to what else it will.

#### SECT. IX.

Perfection not the cause of BEAUTY.

HERE is another notion current, pretty closely allied to the former; that Perfection is the constituent cause of beauty. This opinion has been made to extend much further than to fensible objects. But in these, so far is perfection, considered as such, from being the cause of beauty; that this quality, where it is highest in the female sex, almost always carries with it an idea of weakness and imperfection. Women are very fensible of this; for which reason, they learn to lisp, to totter in their walk, to counterfeit weakness, and even fickness. In all this, they are guided by nature. Beauty in diffress is much the most affecting beauty. Blushing has little less power; and modesty in general, which is a tacit allowance of imperfection, is itself considered as an amiable quality, and certainly heightens every other that is so. I know it is in every body's mouth, that we ought to love perfection. This is to me a sufficient proof, that it is not the proper object of love. Who ever said, we ought to love a fine woman, or even any of these beautiful animals, which please us? Here to be affected, there is no need of the concurrence of our will.

#### SECT. X.

How far the idea of BEAUTY may be applied to the qualities of the MIND.

No R is this remark in general less applicable to the qualities of the mind. Those virtues which cause admiration, and are of the sublimer kind, produce terror rather than love. Such as fortitude, justice, wisdom, and the like. Never was any man amiable by force of these qualities. Those which engage our hearts, which impress us with a sense of loveliness, are the softer virtues; easiness of temper, compassion, kindness and liberality; though certainly those latter are of less immediate and momentous concern to society, and of less dignity.

liar

nity. But it is for that reason that they are so amiable. The great virtues turn . principally on dangers, punishments, and troubles, and are exercised rather in preventing the worst mischiefs, than in dispenfing favours; and are therefore not lovely, though highly venerable. The subordinate turn on reliefs, gratifications, and indulgences; and are therefore more lovely, though inferior in dignity. Those persons who creep into the hearts of most people, who are chosen as the companions of their fofter hours, and their reliefs from care and anxiety, are never persons of shining qualities, nor strong virtues. It is rather the foft green of the foul on which we rest our eyes, that are fatigued with beholding more glaring objects. It is worth observing, how we feel ourselves affected in reading the characters of Cæfar, and Cato, as they are fo finely drawn and contrasted in Salust. In one, the ignoscendo, largiundo; in the other, nil largiundo. In one, the miseris perfugium; in the other, malis perniciem. In the latter we have much to admire, much to reverence, and perhaps fomething to fear; we respect him, but we respect him at a distance. The former makes us fami-

## 770 On the SUBLIME

liar with him; we love him, and he leads us whither he pleases. To draw things closer to our first and most natural feelings, I will add a remark made upon reading this fection by an ingenious friend. authority of a father, so useful to our wellbeing, and fo justly venerable upon all accounts, hinders us from having that entire love for him that we have for our mothers, where the parental authority is almost melted down into the mother's fondness and indulgence. But we generally have a great love for our grandfathers, in whom this authority is removed a degree from us, and where the weakness of age mellows it into something of a feminine partiality.

#### SECT. XI.

How far the idea of BEAUTY may be applied to VIRTUE.

going section, we may easily see, how far the application of beauty to virtue may be made with propriety. The general application of this quality to virtue, has a strong tendency to confound our ideas of things;

things; and it has given rife to an infinite. deal of whimfical theory; as the affixing; the name of beauty to proportion, congruity and perfection, as well as to qualities of. things yet more remote from our naturalideas of it, and from one another, has tended to confound our ideas of beauty, and left us no standard or rule to judge by that was not even more uncertain and fallacious than our own fancies. This loofeand inaccurate manner of speaking, has therefore milled us both in the theory of tafte and of morals; and induced us to remove the science of our duties from their proper basis, (our reason, our relations, and our necessities,) to rest it upon foundations altogether visionary and unsubstantial.

## SECT. XII. The real cause of BEAUTY.

TAVING endeavoured to fhew what beauty is not, it remains that we should examine, at least with equal attention, in what it really confifts. Beauty is a thing much too affecting not to depend Ing as here in the upon

upon some positive qualities. And, since it is no creature of our reason, since it strikes us without any reference to use, and even where no use at all can be discerned, since the order and method of nature is generally very different from our measures and proportions, we must conclude that beauty is, for the greater part, some quality in bodies, acting mechanically upon the human mind by the intervention of the senses. We ought therefore to confider attentively in what manner those sensible qualities are disposed, in such things as by experience we find beautiful, or which excite in us the passion of love, or some correspondent affection.

## SECT. XIII.

Beautiful objects small.

THE most obvious point that presents itself to us in examining any object, is its extent or quantity. And what degree of extent prevails in bodies, that are held beautiful, may be gathered from the usual manner of expression concerning it. I am told that in most languages, the objects of love

love are spoken of under diminutive epithets. It is so in all the languages of which I have any knowledge. In Greek the in. and other diminutive terms are almost always the terms of affection and tenderness. These diminutives were commonly added by the Greeks to the names of persons with whom they conversed on terms of friendship and familiarity. Though the Romans were a people of less quick and delicate feelings, yet they naturally flid into the leffening termination upon the fame occasions. Antiently in the English language the diminishing ling was added to the names of persons and things that were the objects : of love. Some we retain still, as darling, (or little dear) and a few others. But to this day in ordinary conversation, it is usual to add the endearing name of little to every thing we love; the French and Italians make use of these affectionate diminutives even more than we. In the animal creation, out of our own species, it is the small we are inclined to be fond of; little birds, and some of the smaller kinds of beafts. A great beautiful thing, is a manner of expression scarcely ever used; but that

that of a great ugly thing, is very common. There is a wide difference between admiration and love. The fublime, which is the cause of the former, always dwells on great objects, and terrible; the latter on small ones, and pleafing; we submit to what we admire, but we love what fubmits to us; in one case we are forced, in the other we are flattered into compliance. In short, the ideas of the sublime and the beautiful stand on foundations so different, that it is hard, I had almost faid impossible, to think of reconciling them in the same subject, without confiderably leffening the effect of the one or the other upon the passions. So that attending to their quantity, beautiful objects are comparatively small.

## SECT. XIV.

vable in such objects is \* Smoothness.

A quality so effential to beauty, that I do not now recollect any thing beautiful that is not smooth. In trees and flowers, smooth

Part. 4. fect, 21.

leaves are beautiful; smooth slopes of earth in gardens; fmooth ftreams in the landscape; smooth coats of birds and beafts in animal beauties; in fine women, smooth skins; and in several forts of ornamental furniture, fmooth and polished surfaces. A very considerable part of the effect of beauty is owing to this quality; indeed the most considerable. For take any beautiful object, and give it a broken and rugged furface, and however well formed it may be in ather respects, it pleases no longer. Whereas let it want ever fo many of the other constituents, if it wants not this, it becomes more pleasing than almost all the others without it. This feems to me for evident, that I am a good deal surprized, that none who have handled the subject have made any mention of the quality of smoothness in the enumeration of those that go to the forming of beauty. For indeed any ruggedness, any sudden projection, any sharp angle, is in the highest degree contrary to that idea.

## SECT. XV. Gradual VARIATION.

UT as perfectly beautiful bodies are not composed of angular parts, so their parts never continue long in the fame right line.\* They vary their direction every moment, and they change under the eye by a deviation continually carrying on, but for whose beginning or end you will find it difficult to ascertain a point. The view of a beautiful bird will illustrate this observation. Here we see the head increasing infenfibly to the middle, from whence it leffens gradually until it mixes with the neck; the neck loses itself in a larger swell, which continues to the middle of the body, when the whole decreases again to the tail; the tail takes a new direction; but it foon varies its new course; it blends again with the other parts; and the line is perpetually changing, above, below, upon every fide. In this description I have before me the idea of a dove; it agrees very well with most of the conditions of beauty. It is **fmooth** 

<sup>\*</sup> Part 5. fect. 23.

smooth and downy; its parts are (to use that expression) melted into one another; you are presented with no sudden protuberance through the whole, and yet the whole is continually changing. Observe that part of a beautiful woman where she is perhaps the most beautiful, about the neck and breafts; the smoothness; the softness; the eafy and infenfible swell; the variety of the furface, which is never for the smallest fpace the same; the deceitful maze, through which the unfteady eye flides giddily, without knowing where to fix, or whither it is carried. Is not this a demonstration of that change of furface continual and yet hardly perceptible at any point which forms one of the great constituents of heauty? It gives me no small pleasure to find that I can strengthen my theory in this point, by the opinion of the very ingenious Mr. Hogarth; whose idea of the line of beauty I take in general to be extremely just. But the idea of variation, without attending so accurately to the manner of the variation, has led him to consider angular : figures as beautiful; these figures, it is true, . . vary greatly; yet they vary in a sudden . and .: I 5

and broken manner; and I do not find any natural object which is angular, and at the same time beautiful. Indeed sew natural objects are entirely angular. But I think those which approach the most nearly to it, are the ugliest. I must add too, that, so far as I could observe of nature, though the varied line is that alone in which complete beauty is sound, yet there is no particular line which is always found in the most completely beautiful; and which is therefore beautiful in presence to all other lines. At least I never could observe it.

## SECT. XVI. DELICACY.

A N air of robustness and strength is very prejudicial to beauty. An appearance of delicacy, and even of fragility, is almost essential to it. Whoever examines the vegetable or animal creation, will find this observation to be founded in nature. It is not the oak, the ash, or the elm, or any of the robust trees of the forest, which we consider as beautiful; they are awful and majestic; they inspire a sort of reverence.

It is the delicate myrtle, it is the orange, it is the almond, it is the jessamine, it is the vine which we look on as vegetable beauties. It is the flowery species, so remarkable for its weakness and momentary duration, that gives us the livelieft idea of beauty, and elegance. Among animals; the greyhound is more beautiful than the maftiff; and the delicacy of a gennet, a barb, or an Arabian horse, is much more amiable than the strength and stability of some horses of war or carriage. I need here say little of the fair fex, where I believe the point will be easily allowed me. The beauty of women is considerably owing to their weakness, or delicacy, and is even enhance ed by their timidity, a quality of mind analogous to it. I would not here be understood to say, that weakness betraying very bad health has any share in beauty: but the ill effect of this is not because it is weakness, but because the ill flate of health: which produces fuch weakness alters the other conditions of beauty; the parts in such a case collapse; the bright colour, the lumen purpureum juventa is gone; and the fine :

180 On the SUBLIME fine variation is lost in wrinkles, sudden breaks, and right lines.

# SECT. XVII. Beauty in COLOUR.

S to the colours usually found in beautiful bodies; it may be somewhat difficult to ascertain them, because in the feveral parts of nature, there is an infinite variety. However, even in this variety, we may mark out fomething on which to fettle. First the colours of beautiful bodies must not be dusky or muddy, but clean and fair. Secondly, they must not be of the strongest kind. Those which seem most appropriated to beauty, are the milder of every fort; light greens; foft blues; weak whites; pink reds; and violets. Thirdly, if the colours be strong and vivid, they are always diverlified, and the object is never of one strong colour; there are almost always such a number of them (as in variegated flowers) that the strength and glare of each is confiderably abated. In a fine complection, there is not only some variety in the colouring, but the colours, neither the red

red nor the white are strong and glaring. Besides, they are mixed in such a manner, and with such gradations, that it is impossible to fix the bounds. On the same principle it is, that the dubious colour in the necks and tails of peacocks, and about the heads of drakes, is so very agreeable. In reality, the beauty both of shape and colouring are as nearly related, as we can well suppose it possible for things of such different natures to be.

#### SECT. XVIII.

#### RECAPITULATION.

ON the whole, the qualities of beauty, as they are merely sensible qualities are the following. First, to be comparatively small. Secondly, to be smooth. Thirdly, to have a variety in the direction of the parts; but sourthly, to have those parts not angular, but melted as it were into each other. Fifthly, to be of a delicate frame, without any remarkable appearance of strength. Sixthly, to have its colours clear and bright; but not very strong and glaring. Seventhly, or if it should

should have any glaring colour, to have it diversified with others. These are, I believe, the properties on which beauty depends; properties that operate by nature, and are less liable to be altered by caprice, or confounded by a diversity of tastes, than any others.

#### SECT. XIX.

### The PHYSIOGNOMY.

The Physiognomy has a considerable share in beauty, especially in that of our own species. The manners give a certain determination to the countenance, which being observed to correspond pretty. regularly with them, is capable of joining the effect of certain agreeable qualities of the mind to those of the body. So that to form a finished human beauty, and to give it its full influence, the face must be expressive of such gentle and amiable qualities, as correspond with the softness, smootheress, and delicacy of the outward form.

#### SECT. XX.

The EYE.

THAVE hitherto purposely smitted to-I speak of the Eye, which has so great a share in the beauty of the animal creation. as it did not fall so easily under the foregoing heads, though in fact it is reducible. to the same principles. I think then, that the beauty of the eye confifts, first, in its clearness; what coloured eye shall please most, depends a good deal upon particular fancies; but none are pleased with an eye, whosewater (to use that term, is dull and muddy. \* We are pleased with the eye in this view, on the principle upon which we like diamonds, clear water, glass, and such like transparent substances. Secondly, the motion of the eye contributes to its beauty, by continually shifting its direction; but a flow and languid motion is more beautiful than a brifk one; the latter is enlivening; the former lovely. Thirdly, with regard to the union of the eye with the neighbouring parts, it is to hold the same rule

## 184 On the SUBLIME

that is given of other beautiful ones; it is not to make a strong deviation from the line of the neighbouring parts; nor to verge into any exact geometrical figure. Besides all this, the eye affects, as it is expressive of some qualities of the mind, and its principal power generally arises from this; so that what we have just said of the physical ognomy is applicable here.

# SECT. XXI. UGLINESS.

I T may perhaps appear like a fort of repetition of what we have before faid, to infift here upon the nature of Ugliness. As I imagine it to be in all respects the opposite to those qualities which we have laid down for the constituents of beauty. But though ugliness be the opposite to beauty, it is not the opposite to proportion and fitness. For it is possible that a thing may be very ugly with any proportions, and with a perfect fitness to any uses. Ugliness I imagine likewise to be consistent enough with an idea of the sublime. But I would by no means infinuate that ugliness of itself is a sublime.

fublime idea, unless united with such qualities as excite a strong terror.

# SECT. XXII. GRACE.

Racefulness is an idea not very different from beauty; it consists in much the same things. Gracefulness is an idea belonging to posture and motion. In both thefe. to be graceful, it is requifite that there be no appearance of difficulty; there is required a small inflection of the body; and a composure of the parts, in such a manner, as not to incumber each other, nor to appear divided by short and sudden angles. In this ease, this roundness, this delicacy of attitude and motion, it is that all the magic of grace confifts, and what is called its je ne scai quoi; as will be obvious to any obferver who confiders attentively the Venus de Medicis, the Antinous, or any statue generally allowed to be graceful in an high degree.

#### SECT. XXIII.

### ELEGANCE and SPECIOUSNESS.

THEN any body is composed of parts (mooth and polished, without pressing upon each other, without shewing any ruggedness or confusion, and at the same time affecting some regular sbape, I call it elegant. It is closely allied to the beautiful, differing from it only in this regularity; which however, as it makes a very material difference, in the affection produced, may very well constitute another species. Under this head I rank those delicate and regular works of art, that imitate no determinate object in nature, as elegant buildings, and pieces of furniture. When any object partakes of the abovementioned qualities, or of those of beautiful bodies, and is withal of great dimensions; it is full as remote from the idea of mere beauty. I call it fine or specious.

#### SECT. XXIV.

The beautiful in FEELING.

HE foregoing description of beauty, fo far as is taken in by the eye, may be greatly illustrated by describing the nature of objects, which produce a fimilar effect through the touch. This I call the beautiful in Feeling. It corresponds wonderfully with what causes the same species of pleasure to the fight. There is a chain in all our fensations; they are all but different forts of feelings, calculated to be affected by various forts of objects, but all to be affected after the same manner. All bodies that are pleasant to the touch, are fo by the flightness of the relistance they make. Relistance is either to motion along the furface, or to the preflure of theparts on one another; if the former be flight, we call the body, fmooth; if the latter, soft. The chief pleasure we receive by feeling, is in the one or the other of these qualities; and if there be a combination of both, our pleasure is greatly increased. This is so plain, that it is rather more fit to illustrate other things, than to

be illustrated itself by any example. The next source of pleasure in this sense, as in every other, is the continually prefenting somewhat new; and we find that bodies which continually vary their furface, are much the most pleasant, or beautiful, to the feeling, as any one that pleases may experience. The third property in fuch objects is, that though the furface continually varies its direction, it never varies it fuddenly. The application of any thing fudden, even though the impression itself have little or nothing of violence, is difagreeable. The quick application of a finger a little warmer or colder than usual, without notice, makes us flart; a flight tap on the shoulder, not expected, has the same effect. Hence it is that angular bodies, bodies that suddenly vary the direction of the outline, afford so little pleasure to the feeling. Every such change is a fort of climbing or falling in miniature; fo that squares, triangles, and other angular figures, are neither beautiful to the fight nor feeling. Whoever compares his state of mind, on feeling foft, smooth, variegated, unangular bodies, with that in which he finds him-

himself on the view of a beautiful object, will perceive a very striking analogy in the effects of both; and which may go a good way towards discovering their common cause. Feeling and sight in this respect, differ in but a few points. The touch takes in the pleasure of softness, which is not prie marily an object of fight; the fight on the other hand comprehends colour, which can hardly be made perceptible to the touch; the touch again has the advantage in a new idea of pleasure resulting from a moderate degree of warmth; but the eye triumphs in the infinite extent and multiplicity of its objects. But there is such a similitude in the pleasures of these senses, that I am apt to fancy, if it were possible that one might discern colour by feeling, (as it is faid fome blind men have done) that the fame colours, and the fame disposition of colouring, which are found beautiful to the fight, would be found likewise most grateful to the touch. But fetting afide conjectures, let us pass to the other sense; of hearing.

#### SECT. XXV.

#### The beautiful in SOUNDS.

In this sense we find an equal aptitude to be affected in a soft and delicate manner; and how far sweet or beautiful sounds agree with our descriptions of beauty in other senses, the experience of every one must decide. Milton has described this species of music in one of his juvenile poems.\* I need not say that Milton was perfectly well versed in that art; and that no man had a finer ear, with a happier manner of expressing the affections of one sense by metaphors taken from another. The description is as follows.

-And ever against eating cares,
Lap me in soft Lydian airs;
In notes with many a winding bout
Of linked sweetness long drawn out,
With wanton beed, and giddy cunning,
The melting voice through mazes running;
Untwisting all the chains that tye
The bidden soul of barmony.

<sup>·</sup> L'allegro.

Let us parallel this with the softness, the winding surface, the unbroken continuance, the easy gradation of the beautiful in other things; and all the diversities of the several senses, with all their several affections, will rather help to throw lights from one another to finish one clear, consistent idea of the whole, than to obscure it by their intricacy and variety.

To the above-mentioned description I shall add one or two remarks. The first is; that the beautiful in music will not bear that loudness and strength of founds, which may be used to raise other passions; nor notes, which are shrill, or harsh, or deep; it agrees best with such as are clear, even, fmooth, and weak. The fecond is; that great variety, and quick transitions from one measure or tone to another, are contrary to the genius of the beautiful in mufic. Such t transitions often excite mirth, or other fudden and tumultuous passions; but not that finking, that melting, that languor, which is the characteristical effect of the beautiful, as it regards every sense. The

<sup>†</sup> I ne'er am merry, when I hear sweet music.

The passion excited by beauty is in fact nearer to a species of melancholy, than to jollity and mirth. I do not here mean to confine mulic to any one species of notes. or tones, neither is it an art in which I can fay I have any great skill. My sole design in this remark is, to fettle a confiftent idea of beauty. The infinite variety of the affections of the foul will fuggest to a good head, and skilful ear, a variety of such founds, as are fitted to raise them. It can be no prejudice to this, to clear and diffinguish some few particulars, that belong to the same class, and are consistent with each other, from the immense croud of different, and fometimes contradictory ideas, that rank vulgarly under the standard of beauty. And of these it is my intention to mark fuch only of the leading points as shew the conformity of the fense of hearing, with all the other fenses in the article of their pleasures.

authori i an diffunc

### SECT. XXVI.

## TASTE and SMELL.

HIS general agreement of the fenfes is yet more evident on minutely confidering those of taste and smell. metaphorically apply the idea of fweenels to fights, and founds; but as the qualities of bodies by which they are fitted to excite either pleasure or pain in these senses, are not fo obvious as they are in the others, we shall refer an explanation of their analogy, which is a very close one, to that part, wherein we come to confider the common efficient cause of beauty as it regards all the fenfes. I do not think any thing better fitted to establish a clear and fettled idea of vifual beauty, than this way of examining the fimilar pleasures of other fenfes; for one part is fometimes clear in one of the fenfes, that is more obleure in another; and where there is a clear concurrence of all, we may with more certainty speak of any one of them. By this means, they bear witness to each other; Versheie coures keep up on cheand

## 194 On the SUBLIME

nature is, as it were scrutinized; and we report nothing of her, but what we receive from her own information.

### SECT. XXVII-

The Sublime and Beautiful compared.

N closing this general view of beauty, it naturally occurs, that we should compare it with the fublime; and in this comparison there appears a remarkable contrast. For sublime objects are vast in their dimensions, beautiful ones comparatively small; beauty should be smooth, and polished; the great, rugged and negligent. beauty should shun the right line, yet deviate from it insensibly; the great in many cases loves the right line, and when it deviates, it often makes a strong deviation; beauty should not be obscure; the great ought to be dark and gloomy; beauty should be light and delicate; the great ought to be folid, and even massive. They are indeed ideas of a very different nature, one being founded on pain, the other on pleasure; and however they may vary afterwards from the direct nature of their causes, yet these causes keep up an eternal diftinc-

distinction between them, a distinction never to be forgotten by any whose business it is to affect the passions. In the infinite variety of natural combinations we must expect to find the qualities of things the most remote imaginable from each other united in the same object. We must expect also to find combinations of the same kind in the works of art. But when we consider the power of an object upon our passions, we must know that when any thing is intended to affect the mind by the force of some predominant property, the affection produced is like to be the more uniform and perfect, if all the other properties or qualities of the object be of the fame nature, and tending to the fame defign as the principal;

If black and white blend, foften, and unite, A thousand ways, are there no black and white?

If the qualities of the sublime and beautiful are sometimes found united, does this prove that they are the fame, does it prove, that they are any way allied, does it even prove that they are not opposite

## 166 On the SUBLIME

and contradictory? Black and white may fosten, may blend, but they are not therefore the same. Nor when they are so softened and blended with each other, or with different colours, is the power of black as black, or of white as white, so strong as when each stands uniform and distinguished.

The end of the Third Part.

when it out a resultant this Residen

en felicie de la companya de la comp

-iluked between 1600 and to estimate out to the country of the cou

leaster accertice on ce

Sit uniquem a sining constant

[ 197 .]

A

## Philosophical Enquiry

INTO THE

ORIGIN OF OUR IDEAS

OF THE

Sublime and Beautiful.

PART IV.

SECT. I.

Of the efficient cause of the SUBLIME and BEAUTIFUL

When I say, I intend to enquire into the efficient cause of sublimity and beauty, I would not be understood to say, that I can come to the ultimate cause. I do not pretend that I shall ever be able to explain, why certain affections of the body produce such a distinct emotion of mind, and no other; or why the body is at

K 3

all affected by the mind, or the mind by the body. A little thought will shew this to be impossible. But I conceive, if we can discover what affections of the mind produced certain emotions of the body; and what distinct feelings and qualities of body shall produce certain determinate passions in the mind, and no others, I fancy a great deal will be done; something not unuseful towards a distict knowledge of jour passions, so far at least as we have them at present under our consideration. This is all, I believe, we can do. If we could advance a step further, difficulties would still remain, as we should be still equally distant from the first cause. When Newton first discovered the property of attraction, and fettled its laws, he found it ferved very well to explain feveral of the most remarkable phænomena in nature; but yet with reference to the general system of things, he could consider attraction but as an effect, whose cause at that time he did not attempt to trace. But when he afterwards began to account for it by a fubtile elastic æther, this great man (if in fo great a man it be not impious to discover any thing like a blemish) seemed to have quitted his usual cautious manner of philosophizing; fince, perhaps, allowing all that has been advanced on this subject to be fufficiently proved, I think it leaves us with as many difficulties as it found us. That great chain of causes, which linking one to another even to the throne of God himself, can never be unravelled by any industry of ours. When we go but one step beyond the immediately sensible qualities of things, we go out of cur depth. All we do after is but a faint struggle, thatshews we are in an element which does not belong to us. So that when I speak of cause, and efficient cause, I only mean, certain affections of the mind, that cause eertain changes in the body; or certain powers and properties in bodies, that work a change in the mind. As if I were to explain the motion of a body falling to the ground, I would fay it was caused by gravity, and I would endeavour to shew after what manner this power operated, without attempting to shew why it operated in this manner; or if I were to explain the effects of bodies striking one another by the common

≥od func Sewolls

## 200 On the SUBLIME

mon laws of percussion, I should not endeayour to explain how motion itself is communicated.

# SECT. H. ASSOCIATION.

TT is no small bar in the way of our en-I quiry into the cause of our passions, that the occasion of many of them are given, and that their governing motions are communicated at a time when we have not capacity to reflect on them; at a time of which all fort of memory is worn out of our minds. For besides such things as affect us in various manners according to their natural powers, there are affociations made at that early feafon, which we find it very hard afterwards to diftinguish from naturaleffects. Not to mention the unaccountable antipathies which we find in many perfons, we all find it impossible to remember when a steep became more terrible than a. plain, or fire or water more dreadful than a. clod of earth; though all these are very probably either conclusions from experience, or arising from the premonitions of others; and some of them impressed, in all likelihood, pretty late. But as it must be allowed

allowed that many things affect us after a certain manner, not by any natural powers they have for that purpose, but by association; so it would be absurd on the other hand, to say that all things affect us by association only; since some things must have been originally and naturally agreeable or disagreeable, from which the others derive their associated power; and it would be, I sancy, to little purpose to look for the cause of our passions in association, until we sail of it in the natural properties of things.

# SECT. III. Cause of PAIN and FEAR.

Have before observed, that whatever is qualified to cause terror, is a soundation capable of the sublime; to which I add, that not only these, but many things from which we cannot probably apprehend any danger have a similar effect, because they operate in a similar manner. I observe too, that t whatever produces pleasure, positive and original pleasure, is sit to have beauty engrasted on it. Therefore, to clear up the

Part 1. fed. 8.

† Part 1, fect. 10.

nature of these qualities, it may be necesfary to explain the nature of pain and pleafure on which they depend. A man who fuffers under violent bodily pain; (I suppose the most violent, because the effect may be the more obvious.) I say a man in great pain has his teeth fet, his eye-brows are violently contracted, his forehead is wrinkled, his eyes are dragged inwards, and rolled with great vehemence, his hair stands an end, the voice is forced out in short fhrieks and groans, and the whole fabric totters. Fear or terror, which is an apprehension of pain or death, exhibits exactly the same effects, approaching in violence to those just mentioned in proportion to the nearness of the cause, and the weakness of the subject. This is not only so in the human species, but I have more than once observed in dogs, under an apprehension of punishment, that they have writhed their bodies, and yelped, and howled, as if they had actually felt the blows. From hence Lconclude that pain, and fear, act upon the fame parts of the body, and in the fame manner, though somewhat differing in degree. That pain and fear confift in an unnatural tention of the nerves; that this is fometimes.

formetimes accompanied with an unnatural ftrength, which sometimes suddenly changes into an extraordinary weakness that these effects often come on alternately, and i. are sometimes mixed with each other. This is the nature of all convulsive agitations, efpecially in weaker subjects, which are the most liable to the severest impressions of pain and fear. The only difference between pain and terror, is, that things which cause pain operate on the mind, by the intervention of the body; whereas things that cause terror, generally affect the bodily organs by the operation of the mind fuggesting the danger; but both agreeing, either primarily, or fecondarily, in producing a tension, contraction, or violent emotion of the nerves \*, they agree likewise in every thing else. For it appears very clearly to me, from this, as well as from many other \* examples, that when the body is disposed, by any means whatfoever, to fuch emoti-

<sup>\*</sup> I do not here enter into the question debated among physiologists, whether pain be the effect of a
contraction, or a tension of the nerves. Either will
ferve my purpose; for by tension, I mean no more
than a violent pulling of the fibers, which compose
any muscle or membrane, in whatever way this is
done.

## 204 On the SUBLIME

ons as it would acquire by the means of a certain passion; it will of itself excite some thing very like that passion in the mind.

### SECT. IV.

### Continued.

O this purpose Mr. Spon, in his Recherches d'Antiquite, gives us a curious ftory of the celebrated phyliognomist Campanella; this man, it feems, had not only made very accurate observations onhuman faces, but was very expert in mimicking fuch, as were any way remarkable. When he had a mind to penetrate into the inclinations of those he had to deal with, he composed his face, his gesture, and his whole body, as nearly as he could into the exact fimilitude of the person he intended to examine; and then carefully observed what turn of mind he feemed to acquire by this change. So that, fays my author, he was able to enter into the dispositions and thoughts of people, as effectually as if he had been changed into the very men. I have often observed, that on mimicking the looks and geftures, of angry, or placid,

or frightened, or daring men, I have involuntarily found my mind turned to that passion whose appearance I endeavoured to . imitate; nay, I am convinced it is hard to avoid it; though one strove to separate the passion from its correspondent gestures. Our minds and bodies are fo closely and intimately connected, that one is incapable of pain or pleasure without the other. Campanella, of whom we have been speaking, could fo abstract his attention from any sufferings of his body, that he was able to endure the rack itself without much pain; and in leffer pains, every body must have observed, that when we can employ our attention on any thing elfe, the pain has been for a time suspended; on the other hand, if by any means the body is indisposed to perform such gestures, or to be stimulated into fuch emotions as any passion usually, produces in it, that passion itself never can arife, though its cause should be never so strongly in action; though it should be merely mental, and immediately affecting none of the fenses. As an opiate, or spiritous liquors shall suspend the operation of grief, or fear, or anger, in spite of all our efforts

206 On the SUBLIME

efforts to the contrary; and this by inducing in the body a disposition contrary to that which it receives from these passions.

## SECT: V.

How the Sublime is produced.

AVING confidered terror as producing an unnatural tension and certain violent emotions of the nerves; it eafily follows, from what we have just faid, that whatever is fitted to produce such a tension, must be productive of a passion similar to terror, and confequently must be a fource of the fublime, though it should have no idea of danger connected with it. So that little remains towards shewing the cause of the sublime, but to shew that the instances we have given of it in the second part, relate to fuch things as are fitted by nature to produce this fort of tension, either by the primary operation of the mind or the body. With regard to fuch things as affect by the affociated idea of danger, there can be no doubt but that they produce terror, and act by some modification of .

of that passion; and that terror, when sufficiently violent, raises the emotions of the body just mentioned, can as little be doubted. But if the sublime is built on terror, or some passion like it, which has pain for its object; it is previously proper to enquire how any species of delight can be derived from a cause so apparently contrary to it. I say, delight, because, as I have often remarked, it is very evidently different in its cause, and in its own nature, from actual and positive pleasure.

#### SECT. VI.

How pain can be a cause of delight.

PROVIDENCE has so ordered it that a state of rest and inaction, however it may statter our indolence, should be productive of many inconveniencies; that it should generate such disorders, as may force us to have recourse to some labour, as a thing absolutely requisite to make us pass our lives with tolerable satisfaction; for the nature of rest is to suffer all the parts of our bodies to fall into a relaxation, that not only disables the members from performing

performing their functions, but takes away the vigorous tone of fibre which is requifite for carrying on the natural and neceffary fecretions. At the same time, that in this languid inactive flate, the nerves are more liable to the most horrid convulsions, than when they are sufficiently braced and strengthened. Melancholy, dejection, defpair, and often, felf-murder, is the confequence of the gloomy view we take of things in this relaxed state of body. The best remedy for all these evils is exercise or labour; and labour is a furmounting of diffisulties, an exertion of the contracting power of the muscles; and as such resembles, pain, which confifts in tension or contraction, in every thing but degree. Labour : is not only requifite to preferve the coarfer : organs in a state fit for their functions, but it is equally necessary to these finer and ; more delicate organs, on which, and by which, the imagination, and perhaps the other mental powers act. Since it is probable, that not only the inferior parts of the foul, as the passions are called, but the understanding itself makes use of some fine corporeal instruments in its operation; though .

though what they are, and where they are, may be somewhat hard to settle: but that it does make use of such, appears from hence; that a long exercise of the mental. powers induces a remakable laffitude of the whole body; and on the other hand, that great bodily labour, or pain, weakens, and fometimes actually destroys the mental faculties. Now, as a due exercise is essential to the coarse muscular parts of the constitution, and that without this rouzing they would become languid, and difeafed, the very farne rule holds with regard to those finer parts we have mentioned; tohave them in proper order, they must be shaken and worked to a proper degree.

### SECT VIL

EXERCISE necessary for the finer organs.

A S common labour, which is a mode of pain, is the exercise of the grosser, a mode of terror is the exercise of the finer parts of the system; and if a certain mode of pain be of such a nature as to act upon the eye or the ear, as they are the most delicate

# 210 On the SUBLIME

licate organs, the affection approaches more nearly to that which has a mental cause. In all these cases, if the pain and terror are fo modified as not to be actually noxious; if the pain is not carried to violence, and the terror is not conversant about the prefent destruction of the person, as these emotions clear the parts, whether fine or gross, of a dangerous and troublesome incumbrance, they are capable of producing delight; not pleasure, but a fort of delightful horror, a fort of tranquillity tinged with terror; which as it belongs to felf-prefervation is one of the strongest of all the passions. Its object is the fublime \*. Its high. eft-degree I call aftonishment; the subordinate degrees are awe, reverence, and refpect, which by the very etymology of the words shew from what source they are derived, and how they fland diftinguished from positive pleasure,

SECT.

#### SECT. VIII.

Why things, not dangerous, produce a passion like TERROR.

A Mode of terror, or of pain, is always the cause of the sublime. For terror, or associated danger, the foregoing explication is, I believe, sufficient. It will require somewhat more trouble to shew that such examples, as I have given of the sublime in the second part, are capable of producing a mode of pain, and of being thus allied to terror, and to be accounted for on the same principles. And first of such objects as are great in their dimensions. I speak of visual objects.

#### SECT. IX.

Why vifual objects of great dimensions are Sublime.

VISION is performed by having a picture formed by the rays of light which are reflected from the object, painted in one piece, instantaneously, on the retina,

10

or last nervous part of the eye. Or, according to others, there is but one point of. any object painted on the eye in such as manner as to be perceived at once; but by moving the eye, we gather up with great celerity, the several parts of the object, so as to form one uniform piece. If the former opinion be allowed, it will be confidered, that though all the light reflected from a: large body should strike the eye in one infant; yet we must suppose that the body itfelf is formed of a vast number of distinct points, every one of which, or the ray from every one, makes an impression on the retina. So that, though the image of one point should cause but a small tension of this membrane, another, and another, and another stroke, must in their progress cause a very great one, until it arrives at last tothe highest degree; and the whole capacity. of the eye, vibrating in all its parts must approach near to the nature of what causes. pain, and confequently must produce an. idea of the sublime. Again, if we take it, that one point only of an object is diffinguishable at once; the matter will amount? nearly.

nearly to the fame thing, or rather it will make the origin of the sublime from greatness of dimension yet clearer. For if but one point is observed at once, the eye must traverse the vast space of such bodies with great quickness, and consequently the fine nerves and muscles destined to the motion of that part must be very much strained; and their great fenfibility must make them highly affected by this straining. Befides, it fignifies just nothing to the effect produced, whether a body has its parts connected and makes its impression at once; or making but one impression of a point at a time, it causes a succession of the same; or others, fo quickly, as to make them feem united; as is evident from the common effect of whirling about a lighted terch or piece of wood; which if done with celerity, feems a circle of fire.

# SECT. X.

UNITY why requifite to vaftness.

I may be objected to this theory, that the eye generally receives an equal number of rays at all times, and that there-

fore a great object cannot affect it by the number of rays, more than that variety of objects which the eye must always discern, whilst it remains open. But to this I anfwer, that admitting an equal number of rays, or an equal quantity of luminous particles to strike the eye at all times, yet if these rays frequently vary their nature, now to blue, now to red, and so on, or their manner of termination as to a number of petty squares, triangles, or the like, at every change, whether of colour or shape. the organ has a fort of relaxation or rest; but this relaxation and labour so often interrupted, is by no means productive of ease; neither has it the effect of vigorous and uniform labour. Whoever has remarked the different effects of some strong exercife, and fome little piddling action, will understand why a teizing fretful employment, which at once wearies and weakens the body, Thould have nothing great; these forts of impulses which are rather teizing than painful, by continually and fuddenly altering their tenor and direction, prevent that full tension, that species of uniform labour which is allied to ftrong pain, and

and causes the sublime. The sum total of things of various kinds, though it should equal the number of the uniform parts composing some one entire object, is not equal in its effect upon the organs of our bodies. Besides the one already assigned, there is another very ftrong reason for the difference. The mind in reality hardly ever can attend diligently to more than one thing at a time; if this thing be little, the effect is little, and a number of other little objects cannot engage the attention; the mind is bounded by the bounds of the object; and what is not attended to, and what does not exift, are much the fame in the effect; but the eye or the mind (for in this case there is no difference) in great uniform objects does not readily arrive at their bounds; it has no reft, whilst it comtemplates them; the image is much the same every where. So that every thing great by its quantity must necessarily be one, simple and entire. celves any fimole for

pale of the air, which makes the ear d um and the get ar membratous persavibrate ac-

ann lo esiscel bas simulate

# SECT. XI. The artificial INFINITE.

E have observed, that a species of greatness arises from the artificial infinite; and that this infinite confifts in an uniform fuccession of great parts: we obferved too, that the same uniform succession had a like power in founds. But because the effects of many things are clearer in one of the senses than in another, and that all the fenses bear an analogy to, and illustrate one another; I shall begin with this power in founds, as the cause of the sub. limity from succession is rather more obvious in the sense of hearing. And I shall here, once for all, observe, that an investigation of the natural and mechanical causes of our passions, besides the curiosity of the subject, gives, if they are discovered, a double strength and lustre to any rules we deliver on fuch matters. When the ear receives any simple found, it is struck by a single pulse of the air, which makes the ear-drum and the other membranous parts vibrate according to the nature and species of the stroke.

Aroke. If the strake be strong, the organ of hearing fuffers a confiderable degree of tension. If the stroke be repeated pretty foon after, the repetition causes an expectation of another ftroke. And it must be observed, that expectation itself causes a tension. This is apparent in many animals. who when they prepare for hearing any found, rouse themselves, and prick up their ears; fo that here the effect of the founds is confiderably augmented by a new auxiliary, the expectation. But though after a number of strokes, we expect still more, not being able to afcertain the exact time of their arrival, when they arrive, they produce a fort of furprize, which increases this tension yet further. For, I have observed, that when at any time I have waited very earnestly for some found, that returned at intervals, (as the fluccessive firling of cannon) though I fully expected the return of the found, when it came, it always made me start a little; the ear-drum suffered a convulfion, and the whole body confented with it. The tention of the part thus increafing at every blow, by the united forces of the stroke itself, the expectation, and the **furprize** 

## 217 On the SUBLIME

furprize, it is worked up to such a pitch as to be capable of the sublime; it is brought just to the verge of pain. Even when the cause has ceased; the organs of hearing being often successively struck in a similar manner, continue to vibrate in that manner for some time longer; this is an additional help to the greatness of the effect.

# SECT. XII.

The vibrations must be similar.

But if the vibration be not similar at every impression, it can never be carried beyond the number of actual impressions; for, move any body, as a pendulum, in one way, and it will continue to oscillate in an arch of the same circle, until the known causes make it rest; but if after first putting it in motion in one direction, you push it into another, it can never reassume the first direction; because it can never move itself, and consequently it can have but the effect of that last motion; whereas, if in the same direction you act upon it several times, it will describe a greater arch, and move a longer time.

#### SECT. XIII.

The effects of SUCCESSION, in visual objects, explained.

F we can comprehend clearly how things operate upon one of our fenses; there can be very little difficulty in conceiving in what manner they affect the rest. To say a great deal therefore upon the corresponding affections of every fenfe, would tend rather to fatigue us by an useless repetition, than to throw any new light upon the fubject, by that ample and diffuse manner of treating it; but as in this discourse we chiefly attach ourselves to the sublime, as it affects the eye, we shall consider particularly why a fuccessive disposition of uniform parts in the same right line should be fublime, \* and upon what principle this: disposition is enabled to make a comparatively small quantity of matter produce a grander effect, than a much larger quantity disposed in another manner. To avoid the perplexity of general notions; let us fet before our eyes a colonnade of uniform pillars planted in a right line; let us take

L 2

our

our stand, in such a manner, that the eye may shoot along this colonnade, for it has its best effect in this view. In our present fituation it is plain, that the rays from the first round pillar will cause in the eye a vibration of that species; an image of the pillar itself. The pillar immediately succeeding increases it; that which follows renews and enforces the impression; each in its order, as it succeeds, repeats impulse after impulse, and stroke after stroke, until the eye long exercifed in one particular way cannot lofe that object immediately; and being violently rouzed by this continued agitation, it presents the mind with a grand or fublime conception. But instead of viewing a rank of uniform pillars; let us suppose, that they succeed each other, a round and a fquare one alternately. this case the vibration cansed by the first round pillar periffies as foon as it is formed; and one of quite another fort (the fquare) directly occupies its place; which however it refigns as quickly to the round one; and thus the eye proceeds, alternately, taking up one image and laying down another, as long as the building continues. From whence

whence it is obvious, that at the last pillar the impression is as far from continuing, as it was at the very first; because in fact, the fenfory can receive no distinct impresfion but from the last; and it can never of itself refume a dissimilar impression; besides. every variation of the object is a rest and relaxation to the organs of fight; and thefe reliefs prevent that powerful emotion fo neceffary to produce the fublime. To produce therefore a perfect grandeur in such things as we have been mentioning, there fhould be a perfect simplicity, an absolute uniformity in disposition, shape and colouring. Upon this principle of fuccession and uniformity it may be asked, why a long bare wall should not be a more fillime object than a colonnade; fince the fuccession is no way interrupted; fince the eye meets no check; fince nothing more uniform can be conceived? A long bare wall is certainly not fo grand an object as a colonnate of the same length and height. It is not altogether difficult to account for this difference. When we look at a naked wall, from the evenness of the object, the eye runs along its whole space, and arrives L3 quickly

quick at its termination; the eye meets nothing which may interrupt its progrefs; but then it meets nothing which may detain it a proper time to produce a very great and lafting effect. The view of a bare wall, if it be of a great height and length, is undoubtedly grand: but this is only one idea, and not a repetition of fimilar ideas; it is therefore great, not so much upon the principle of infinity, as upon that of vafiness. But we are not so powerfully affected with any one impulse, unless it be one of a prodigious force indeed, as we are with a fuccession of similar impulses; because the nerves of the sensory do not (if I may use the expression) acquire a habit of repeating the same feeling in such a manner as to continue it longer than its. cause is in action; besides, all the effects. which I have attributed to expectation and furprize, fect. 11. can have no place in a bare wall.

and story of the ene

quickly

icrima lia dante

#### SECT. XIV.

Locke's opinion concerning darkness, considered.

T is Mr. Locke's opinion, that darkness is not naturally an idea of terror; and that, though an excessive light is painful to the sense, that the greatest excess of darkness is no ways troublesome. He obferves indeed in another place, that a nurse or an old woman having once affociated the ideas of ghofts and goblins with that of darkness, night ever after becomes painful and horrible to the imagination. The authority of this great man is doubtless as great, as that of any man can be, and it feems to stand in the way of our general principle. \* We have confidered darkness as a cause of the sublime; and we have all along confidered the fublime as depending on some modification of pain or terror; so that, if darkness be no way painful or terrible to any, who have not had their minds early tainted with superstitions, it can be no fource of the sublime to them. L 4 with

with all deference to fuch an authority; it feems to me, than an affociation of a more general nature, an affociation which takes in all mankind, may make darkness terrible; for in utter darkness, it is impossible to know in what degree of fafety we stand: we are ignorant of the objects that furround us; we may every moment strike against fome dangerous obstruction; we may fall down a precipice the first step we take: and if an enemy approach, we know not in what quarter to defend ourselves; in fuch a case strength is no sure protection; wisdom can only act by guess; the boldest are staggered, and he who would pray for nothing elfe towards his defence, is forced to pray for light.

Ζου σεαλες, αλλα συ ρυσαι υπ' ηιρος υας Αχαιου. Ποιοτρι δ' αιθριν, δες δ' οφθαλμοισιν ιδισθαι. Το δι βαιο και, ολιατον, επει νυ τοι ευαδιν υτως.

ILIAD. 17.

Lord of earth and air!

Ob King! ab Fathers bear my bumble pray'r:

Dispel this cloud, she light of heaven nestore;

Give me to see, and Ajax asks no more:

If Greece must perish, we they will obey,

But let us perish in the face of day. POPE.

Part 2 (08), 1,

As to the affociation of ghosts and goblins; surely it is more natural to think, that darkness being originally an idea of terror, was chosen as a fit scene for such terrible representations, than that such representations, have made darkness terrible. The mind of man very easily slides into an error of the former sort; but it is very hard to imagine, that the effect of an idea so universally terrible in all times, and in all countries, as darkness, could possibly have been owing to a set of idle stories, or to any cause of a nature so trivial, and of an operation so precarious.

## SECT. XV.

DARKNESS terrible in its own nature.

That blackness and darkness are in some degree painful by their natural operation, independent of any associations whatsoever. I must observe, that the ideas of darkness and blackness are much the same; and they differ only in this, that blackness is a more confined idea. Mr. Cheselden has given us a very curious tory

story of a boy who had been born blind, and continued fo till he was thirteen or fourteen years old; he was then couched for a cataract, by which operation he received his fight. Among many remarkable particulars that attended his first perceptions, and judgments on visual objects. Chefelden tells us, that the first time the boy faw a black object, it gave him great uneafiness, and that some time after, upon accidentally feeing a negro woman, he was ftruck with great horror at the fight. The horror, in this case, can searcely be supposto arise from any affociation. The boy appears by the account to have been particularly observing, and sensible for one of his age: and therefore, it is probable, if the great uneafiness he felt at the first light of black, had arisen from its connexion with any other disagreeable ideas, he would? have observed and mentioned it. For an idea, disagreeable only by affociation, has the cause of its ill effect on the passions evident enough at the first impression; in ordinary cases, it is indeed frequently lost; but this is, because the original affociation was made very early. and the confequent impression

impression repeated often. In our instance, there was no time for such an habit; and there is no reason to think, that the ill effects of black on his imagination were more owing to its connexion with any disagareeable ideas, than that the good effects of more cheerful colours were derived from their connexion with pleasing ones. They had both probably their effects from their natural operation.

## SECT. XVI.

Why DARKNESS is terrible.

It is observable, that still as we recede from the light, nature has so contrived it, that the pupil is enlarged by the retiring of the iris, in proportion to our recess. Now instead of declining from it but a little, suppose that we withdraw entirely from the light; it is reasonable to think, that the contraction of the radial sibres of the iris is proportionably greater; and that this part may by great darkness come to be so contracted, as to strain the

nerves that compose it beyond their natural tone; and by this means to produce a painful fensation. Such a tension it seems there certainly is, whilft we are involved in darkness; for in such a state whilst the eye remains open, there is a continual nifus to receive light; this is manifest from the flashes, and luminous appearances which often feem in these circumstances to play before it; and which can be nothing but the effect of spasms, produced by its own efforts in pursuit of its object; several other strong impulses will produce the idea of light in the eye, belides the substance of light itself, as we experience on many occasions. Some who allow darkness to be a cause of the sublime, would infer from the dilatation of the pupil, that a relaxation may be productive of the fublime as well as a convultion; but they do. not, I believe, confider, that although the circular rings of the iris be in some sense a fphincter, which may possibly be dilated by a simple relaxation, yet in one respect it differs from most of the other sphincters of the body, that it is furnished with antagonift muscles, which are the radial fibres of the

the iris; no fooner does the circular muscle begin to relax, than these fibres wanting their counterpoise, are forcibly drawn back, and open the pupil to a confiderable wideness. But though we were not apprized of this, I believe any one will find if he. opens his eyes and makes an effort to fee in a dark place, that a very perceivable pain enfues. And I have heard fome ladies remark, that after having worked a long time upon a ground of black, their eyes were fo pained and weakened they could hardly fee. It may perhaps be objected to this theory of the mechanical effect of darkness, that the ill effects of darkness or blackness seem rather mental than corporeal; and I own it is true, that they do fo; and fo do all those that depend on the affections of the finer parts of our fyftem. The ill effects of bad weather appear often no otherwife, than in a melancholy and dejection of spirits, though without doubt, in this case, the bodily organs fuffer first, and the mind through these organs. of their set attended in the chief in

foother fire in the manner of the for-

dusgrecable;

## SECT. XVII.

The effects of BLACKNESS.

Lackness is but a partial darkness; and Therefore it derives some of its powers from being mixed and furrounded with coloured bodies. In its own nature, it cannot be confidered as a colour. Black bodies, reflecting none, or but a few rays, with regard to fight, are but as fo many vacant spaces dispersed among the objects we view. When the eye lights on one of these vacuities, after having been kept in fome degree of tension by the play of the adjacent colours upon it, it suddenly falls into a relaxation; out of which it as suddenly recovers by a convultive fpring. To illustrate this; let us consider, that when we intend to fit in a chair, and find it much lower than was expected, the shock is very violent; much more violent than could be thought from fo flight a fall as the difference between one chair and another can possibly make. If, after descending a flight of shairs, we attempt inadvertently to take another step in the manner of the former ones, the shock is extremely rude and i disagreeable;

difagreeable; and by no art, can we cause fuch a shock by the same means, when we expect and prepare for, it. When I fay. that this is owing to having the change made contrary to expectation; I do not mean folely, when the mind expects, I mean : likewife, that when any organ of fense is for some time affected in some one manner, if it be suddenly affected, otherwise there enfues a convultive motion; fuch a convullion as is caused when any thing happens, against the expectance of the mind. And though it may appear extraordinary that fuch a change as produces a relaxation, should immediately produce a sudden convultion; it is yet most certainly so, and fo in all the fenfes. Every one knows that fleep is a relaxation; and that filence, where nothing keeps the organs of hearing in action, is in general fitest to bring on this relaxation; yet when a fort of murmuring founds dispose a man to sleep, let these : founds cease suddenly, and the person immediately awakes; that is, the parts are braced up suddenly, and he awakes. This I have often experienced myself, and I have heard the same from observing persons. In like manner, if a person in broad day light

were falling afleep, to introduce a fudden darkness would prevent his sleep for that time, though filence and darkness in themfelves, and not fuddenly introduced, are very favourable to it. This I knew only by conjecture on the analogy of the fen's when I first digested these observations; but I have fince experienced it. And I have often experienced, and fo have a thousand others; that on the first inclining towards. fleep, we have been fuddenly awakened: with a most violent start; and that this start was generally preceded by a fort of dream. of our falling down a precipice: whence does this ftrange motion arise; but from the too sudden relaxation of the body, which by fome mechanism in nature restores itself by as quick and vigorous an exertion of the contracting power of the mulcles? the dream itself is caused by this relaxation; and it is of too uniform a nature to be attributed to any other cause. The parts relax too fuddenly, which is in the nature of falling; and this accident of the body induces this image in the mind. When we are in a confirmed state of health and vigour, as all changes are then less sudden.

den, and less on the extreme, we can seldom complain of this disagreeable sensation.

# SECT. XVIII.

The effects of BLACKNESS moderated.

HOUGH the effects of black be painful originally, we must not think they always continue fo. Custom reconciles us to every thing. After we have been used to the fight of black objects, the terror abates, and the smoothness and gloffiness or some agreeable accident of bodies. fo coloured, foftens in some measure the horror and sterness of their original nature; yet the nature of the original impresfion still continues. Black will always have fomething melancholy in it, because the fenfory will always find the change to it from other colours too violent; or if it occupy the whole compass of the fight, it will then be darkness; and what was said of darkness, will be applicable here. I do not purpose to go into all that might be faid to illustrate this theory of the effects of light and darkness; neither will I examine

mine all the different effects produced by the various modifications and mixtures of these two causes. If the foregoing observations have any soundation in nature, I conceive them very sufficient to account for all the phænomena that can arise from all the combinations of black with other colours. To enter into every particular, or to answer every objection, would be an endless labour. We have only followed the most leading roads, and we shall observe the same conduct in our enquiry into the cause of beauty.

# SECT. XIX. The physical cause of LOVE.

HEN we have before us such objects as excite love and complacency, the body is affected, so far as I could observe, much in the following manner. The head reclines something on one side; the eyelids are more closed than usual, and the eyes roll gently with an inclination to the object, the mouth is a little opened, and the breath drawn slowly, with now and then a low sigh: the whole body is composed,

posed, and the hands fall idly to the fides. All this is accompanied with an inward fense of melting and languor. These appearances are always proportioned to the degree of beauty in the object, and of fenfibility in the observer. And this gradation from the highest pitch of beauty and fenfibility, even to the lowest of mediocrity. and indifference, and their correspondent effects, ought to be kept in view, else this description will seem exaggerated, which it certainly is not. But from this description it is almost impossible not to conclude, that beauty acts by relaxing the folids of the whole system. There are all the appearances of fuch a relaxation; and a relaxation fomewhat below the natural tone. feems to me to be the cause of all positive pleasure. Who is a stranger to that manner of expression so common in all times: and in all countries, of being fostened, relaxed, enervated, disfolved, melted away by pleasure? The universal voice of mankind, faithful to their feelings, concurs in affirming this uniform and general effect; and although some odd and particular instance

may perhaps be found, wherein there appears a confiderable degree of politive pleafure, without all the characters of relaxation, we must not therefore reject the conelulion we had drawn from a concurrence of many experiments, but we must still retain it, subjoining the exceptions which may occur according to the judicious rule laid down by Sir Isaac Newton in the third book of his Optics. Our polition will, I conceive, appear confirmed beyond any reafonable doubt, if we can shew that such things as we have already observed to be the genuine conflituents of beauty, have each of them separately taken a natural tendency to relax the fibres. And if it must be allowed us, that the appearance of the human body, when all these constituents are united together before the fenfory, further favours this opinion, we may venture, I believe, to conclude, that the paffion called love is produced by this relaxation. By the same method of reasoning, which we have used in the enquiry into the causes of the fublime, we may likewife conclude, that. as a beautiful object presented to the fense. by cauling a relaxation in the body, produby any means the passion should first have its origin in the mind, a relaxation of the outward organs will as certainly ensue in a degree proportioned to the cause.

#### SECT. XX.

Why SMOOTHNESS is beautiful.

T is to explain the true cause of visual beauty, that I call in the affiftance of the other senses. If it appears that smoothness is a principal cause of pleasure to the touch, tafte, smell, and hearing, it will be eafily admitted a conftituent of vifual beauty; especially as we have before shewn, that this quality is found almost without exception in all bodies that are by general consent held beautiful. There can be no doubt that bodies which are rough and angular, rouze and vellicate the organs of feeling, caufing a fense of pain, which confifts in the violent tenfion or contraction of the muscular fibres. On the contrary, the application of smooth bodies relaxes; gentle stroking with a smooth hand allays violent pains and cramps, and relaxes the fliffering parts from their unnatural tension; and it has therefore very often no mean effect in removing swellings and obstructions. The sense of feeling is highly gratified with smooth bodies. A bed smoothly laid, and soft, that is, where the resistance is every way inconsiderable, is a great luxury, disposing to an universal relaxation, and inducing beyond any thing else, that species of it called sleep.

#### SECT. XXI.

SWEETNESS, its nature.

In OR is it only in the touch, that smooth bodies cause positive pleasure by relaxation. In the smell and taste, we find all things agreeable to them, and which are commonly called sweet, to be of a smooth nature, and that they all evidently tend to relax their respective sensories. Let us first consider the taste. Since it is most easy to enquire into the property of liquids, and since all things seem to want a shuid vehicle to make them tasted at all, I intend rather to consider the liquid than the solid parts of our food. The vehicles of

all taftes are water and oil. And what determines the tafte is some salt, which affects variously according to its nature, or its manner of being combined with other things. Water and oil simply considered are capable of giving some pleasure to the tafte. Water, when simple, is insipid, inodorous, colourless, and smooth; it is found when not cold to be a great resolver of spasms, and lubricator of the fibres; this power it probably owes to its smoothness. For as fluidity depends, according to the most general opinion, on the roundness, smoothness and weak cohesion of the component parts of any body; and as water acts merely as a simple fluid; it follows that the cause of its fluidity is likewise the cause of its relaxing quality; namely, the smoothness and flippery texture of its parts. The other fluid vehicle of tastes is oil. This too, when fumple, is infipid, inodorous, colourless, and fmooth to the touch and tafte. It is smoother than water, and in many cases yet more relaxing. Oil is in some degree pleafant to the eye, the touch and the tafte, infipid as it is. Water is not fo grateful, which I do not know on what principle to account

account for, other than that water is not for foft and smooth. Suppose that to this oil or water were added a certain quantity of a specific salt, which had a power of putting the nervous papillæ of the tongue into a gentle vibratory motion; as suppose fugar dissolved in it. The smoothness of the oil, and the vibratory power of the falt. cause the sense we call sweetness. In all fweet bodies fugar, or a fubstance very little different from fugar, is constantly found; every species of salt examined by the microscope has its own distinct; regular, invariable form. That of nitre is a pointeds oblong; that of fea falt an exact cube; that of fugar a perfect globe. If you have tried how fmooth globular bodies, as the marbles with which boys amuse themselves, have affected the touch when they are rolled backward and forward and over onevanother, you will easily conceive how sweetness, which confitts in a falt of fuch nature, affects the tafte; for a fingle globe, (though formewhat pleafant to the feeling) yer by the regularity of its form, and the fomewhat too fudden deviation of its parts from a right line, it is nothing near for pleafant to the THEOLOGE

the touch as feveral globes, where the hand gently rifes to one and falls to another; and this pleasure is greatly increased if the globes are in motion, and sliding over one another; for this foft variety prevents that weariness, which the uniform disposition of the feveral globes would otherwise produce. Thus in sweet liquors, the parts of the fluid vehicle though most probably round, are yet so minute as to conceal the figure of their component parts from the nicest inquisition of the microscope; and confequently being fo excessively minute, they have a fort of flat simplicity to the tafte, refembling the effects of plain smooth bodies to the touch; for if a body be composed of round parts excessively small, and packed pretty closely together, the surface will be both to the fight and touch as if it were nearly plain and smooth. It is clear from their unveiling their figures to the microscope, that the particles of sugar are considerably larger than those of water or oil, and consequently that their effects from their roundness will be more diffinel and palpable to the nervous papillæ of that nice organ the tongue: they will induce Mary viscos

#### 242 On the SUBLIME

that sense called sweetness, which in a weak manner we discover in oil, and in a yet weaker in water; for insipid as they are, water and oil are in some degree sweet; and it may be observed, that insipid things of all kinds approach more nearly to the nature of sweetness than to that of any other taste.

## SECT. XXII. SWEETNESS relaxing.

IN the other senses we have remarked, that smooth things are relaxing. Now it ought to appear that fweet things, which are the smooth of taste, are relaxing too. It is remarkable, that in some languages foft and sweet have but one name. Doux in French signifies soft as well as sweet. The Latin Dulcis, and the Italian Dolce, have in many cases the same double signification. That sweet things are generally relaxing is evident; because all such, especially those which are most oily, taken frequently or in a large quantity, very much enfeeble the tone of the stomach. Sweet fmells, which bear a great affinity to sweet taftes, relax very remarkably. The finell

of flowers disposes people to drowlines; and this relaxing effect is further apparent from the prejudice which people of weak nerves receive from their use. It were worth while to examine, whether taftes of this kind, fweet ones, taftes that are caused by smooth oils and a relaxing falt are not the originally pleasant tastes. For many which use has rendered such, were not at all agreeable at first. The way to examine this is, to try what nature has originally provided for us, which she has undoubtedly made originally pleasant; and to analyse this provision. Milk is the first support of our childhood. The component parts of this are water, oil, and a fort of a very sweet salt called the fugar of milk. All these when blended have a great smoothness to the taste, and a relaxing quality to the fkin. The next thing children covet is fruit, and of fruits those principally which are sweet; and every one knows that the sweetness of fruit is caused by a subtile oil and such a salt as that mentioned in the last section. Afterwards, custom, habit, the defire of novelty, and a thousand other causes, confound, adulterate, and change our palates, fo that M 2

#### 244 On the SUBLIME

we can no longer reason with any satisfaction about them. Before we quit this article we must observe; that as smooth things are, as such, agreeable to the taste, and are found of a relaxing quality; so on the other hand, things which are found by experience to be of a strengthening quality, and fit to brace the fibers, are almost universally rough and pungent to the taste, and in many cases rough even to the touch. We often apply the quality of sweetness, metaphorically, to visual objects. For the better carrying on this remarkable analogy of the senses, we may here call sweetness the beautiful of the taste.

# SECT. XXIII. VARIATION, why beautiful.

A NOTHER principal property of beautiful objects is that the line of their parts is continually varying its direction; but it varies it by a very infensible deviation, it never varies it so quickly as to surprize, or by the sharpness of its angle to cause any twitching or convulsion of the optic nerve. Nothing long continued in the same manner, nothing very suddenly varied

varied can be beautiful; because both are opposite to that agreeable relaxation, which is the characteristic effect of beauty. thus in all the fenses. A motion in a right line, is that manner of moving next to a very gentle descent, in which we meet the least resistance; yet it is not that manner of moving, which, next to a descent, wearies us the least. Rest certainly tends to relax; yet there is a species of motion which relaxes more than rest; a gentle oscillatory motion, a rifing and falling. Rocking fets children to sleep better than absolute rest; there is indeed scarce any thing at that age, which gives more pleasure than to be gently lifted up and down; the manner of playing which their nurses use with children, and the weighing and swinging used afterwards by themselves as a favourite amusement, evince this very sufficiently. Most people must have observed the fort of fense they have had, on being swiftly drawn in an easy coach, on a smooth turf, with gradual ascents and declivities. This will give a better idea of the beautiful, and point out its probable cause better than almost any thing elfe. On the contrary; when one is M 2

is hurried over a rough, rocky, broken road, the pain felt by these sudden inequalities shews why similar fights, feelings and founds are so contrary to beauty; and with regard to the feeling, it is exactly the same in its effect, or very nearly the same, whether, for instance, I move my hand along the surface of a body of a certain shape, or whether fuch a body is moved along my hand. But to bring this analogy of the fenses home to the eye; if a body presented to that sense has such a waving surface that the rays of light reflected from it are in a continual infensible deviation from the strongest to the weakest, (which is always the case in a surface gradually unequal,) it must be exactly fimilar in its effect on the eye and touch; upon the one of which it operates directly, on the other indirectly. And this body will be beautiful if the lines which compose its surface are not continued, even sovaried, in a manner that may weary or diffipate the attention. The variation itself must be continually varied.

# SECT. XXIV. Concerning SMALLNESS.

O avoid a sameness which may arise from the too frequent repetition of the same reasonings, and of illustrations of the fame nature, I will not enter very minutely into every particular that regards beauty, as it is founded on the disposition of its quantity, or its quantity itself. In speaking of the magnitude of bodies there is great uncertainty, because the ideas of great and small, are terms almost entirely relative to the species of the object, which are infinite. It is true, that having once fixed the species of any object, and the dimensions common in the individuals of that species, we may observe some that exceed, and some that fall short of the ordinary flandard: these which greatly exceed, are by that excess, provided the species itfelf be not very small, rather great and terrible than beautiful; but as in the animal world, and in a good measure in the vegetable world likewise, the qualities that constitute beauty may possibly be united to M 4 and to torricthings

things of greater dimensions; when they are so united they constitute a species something different both from the sublime and beautiful, which I have before called Fine; but this kind I imagine has not such a power on the passions, either as vast bodies have which are endued with the correspondent qualities of the fublime; or as the qualities of beauty have when united in a fmall object. The affection produced by large bodies adorned with the spoils of beauty, is a tension continually relieved which approaches to the nature of mediocrity. But if I were to fay how I find myfelf affected upon such occasions, I should fay that the sublime suffers less by being united to some of the qualities of beauty. than beauty does by being joined to greatness of quantity, or any other properties of the fublime. There is fomething fo overruling in whatever inspires us with awe, in all things which belong ever fo remotely to terror, that nothing else can stand in their presence. There lie the qualities of beauty either dead and unoperative; or at most exerted to mollify the rigour and sterness of the terror, which is the natural concomitant of greatness. Besides the extraordinary

traordinary great in every species, the oppolite to this, the dwarfish and diminutive ought to be considered. Littleness, merely as fuch, has nothing contrary to the idea of beauty. The humming bird both in shape' and colouring yields to none of the winged species, of which it is the least; and perhaps his beauty is enhanced by his smallness. But there are animals, which when they are extremely (mall are rarely (if ever) beautiful. There is a dwarfish size of men and women, which is almost constantly so gross and massive in comparison of their height, that they present us with a very disagreeable image. But should a man be found not above two or three feet high, fuppoling such a person to have all the parts of his body of a delicacy fuitable to fuch a fize, and otherwise endued with the common qualities of other beautiful bodies, I am pretty well convinced that a person of fuch a stature might be considered as beautiful; might be the object of love; might give us very pleasing ideas on viewing him. The only thing which could possibly interpose to check our pleasure is, that such creatures, however formed, are unufual, M 5 and

and are often therefore confidered as fomething monstrous. The large and gigantic, though very compatible with the fublime. is contrary to the beautiful. It is impossible to suppose a giant the object of love. When we let our imagination loofe in romance, the ideas we naturally annex to that fize are those of tyranny, cruelty, injustice, and every thing horrid and abominable. We paint the giant ravaging the country, plundering the innocent traveller, and afterwards gorged with his half-living flesh: such are Polyphemus, Cacus and others, who make so great a figure in romances and heroic poems. The event we attend to with the greatest satisfaction is their defeat and death. I do not remember in all that multitude of deaths withwhich the Iliad is filled, that the fall of any man remarkable for his great stature and strength touches us with pity; nor does it appear that the author, fo well read in human nature, ever intended it should. It is Simoisius in the soft bloom of youth, torn from his parents, who tremble for a courage so ill suited to his strength; it is another hurried by war from the new embraces of his bride, young, and fair, and a novice

novice to the field, who melts us by his untimely fate, Achilles, in spite of the many qualities of beauty which Homer has bestowed on his outward form, and the many great virtues with which he has adorned his mind, can never make us love him. It may be observed, that Homer has given the Trojans, whose fate he has defigned to excite our compassion, infinitely more of the amlable focial virtues than he has distributed among the Greeks. With regard to the Trojans, the passion he chuses to raise is pity; pity is a passion founded on love; and these lesser, and if I may fay, domestic virtues, are certainly the most amiable. But he has made the Greeks far their superiors in the politic and military virtues. The councils of Priam are weak; the arms of Hector comparatively feeble; his courage far below that of Achilles, Yet we love Priam more than Agamemnon, and Hector more than his conqueror Achilles. Admiration is the passion which Homer would excite in favour of the Greeks, and he has done it by bestowing on them the virtues which have but little to do with love. This fhort digression is perhaps not wholly befide our purpofe, where

where our business is to shew, that objects of great dimensions are incompatible with beauty, the more incompatible as they are greater; whereas the small, if ever they fail of beauty, this failure is not to be attributed to their size.

# SECT. XXV.

fition is almost infinite; but I conceive the principles laid down in the beginning of this part are sufficient to account for the effects of them all, as well as for the agreeable effect of transparent bodies, whether suid or solid. Suppose I look at a bottle of muddy liquor, of a blue or red colour: the blue or red rays cannot pass clearly to the eye, but are suddenly and unequally stopped by the intervention of little opaque bodies, which without preparation change the idea, and change it too into one disagreeable in its own nature, conformable to the principles laid down.

in fect. 24. But when the ray paffes without such opposition through the glass or liquor, when the glass or liquor are quite transparent, the light is something softened in the paffage, which makes it more agreeable even as light; and the liquor reflecting all the rays of its proper colour evenly, it has fuch an effect on the eye, as Imouth opaque bodies have on the eye and touch. So that the pleasure here is compounded of the foftness of the transmitted, and the evenness of the reflected light. This pleafure may be heightened by the common principles in other things, if the shape of the glass which holds the transparent liquor be so judiciously varied, as to prefent the colour gradually and interchangeably weakened and ftrengthened with all that variety which judgment in affairs of this nature shall suggest. On a review of all that has been faid of the effects, as well as the causes of both; it will appear, that the fublime and beautiful are built on principles very different, and that their affectitions are as different: the great has terror for its basis; which, when it is modified, caules

#### 254 On the SUBLIME

causes that emotion in the mind, which I have called astonishment; the beautiful is sounded on mere positive pleasure, and excites in the soul that feeling, which is called love. Their causes have made the subject of this sourth part.

The end of the Fourth Part.

the colour gradually and ansochergradus weakened and throughered with all that defer which between his experiences

se there are provided as faithful met my confirm

PROPERTY TO THE PROPERTY OF TH

the cauties of nothing a visitappear, seasond

tions are to deliment to be been applied to the terms to

A

#### Philosophical Enquiry

INTOTHE

ORIGIN OF OUR IDEAS

OF THE

Sublime and Beautiful.

PART V.

SECT. I.

OF WORDS.

laws of that connexion, which Providence has established between certain motions and configurations of bodies, and certain consequent seelings in our minds. Painting affects in the same manner, but with the superadded pleasure of imitation. Architecture affects by the laws of nature, and the law of reason; from which latter result

#### 256 On the SUBLIME

a work to be praifed or censured, in the whole or in some part, when the end for which it was defigned is or is not properly answered. But as to words; they seem to me to affect us in a manner very different from that in which we are affected by natural objects, or by painting or architecture; yet words have as considerable as hare in exciting ideas of beauty and of the sublime as any of those, and sometimes a much greater than any of them; therefore an enquiry into the manner by which they excite such emotions is far from being unnecessary in a discourse of this kind.

#### SECT. II.

The common effect of POETRY, not by raising ideas of things.

THE common notion of the power of poetry and eloquence, as well as that of words in ordinary conversation, is; that they affect the mind by raising in it ideas of those things for which custom has appointed them to stand. To examine the truth of this notion, it may be requisite

to observe that words may be divided into three foris. The first are such as represent many simple ideas united by nature to form some one determinate composition, as man, horse, tree, castle, &c. These I call aggregate words. The second, are they that stand for one simple idea of such compofitions and no more; as red, blue, round, fquare, and the like. These I call fimple abstract words. The third, are those, which are formed by an union, an arbitrary union of both the others, and of the various relations between them, in greater or less degrees of complexity; as virtue, honour, persuasion, magistrate, and the like. There I call compounded abstract words. Words, I am fentible, are capable of being classed into more curious distinctions; but these seem to be natural, and enough for our purpose; and they are disposed in that order in which they are commonly taught, and in which the mind gets the ideas they are substituted for. I shall begin with the third fort of words; compound abstracts, such as virtue, honour, persuasion, docility. Of these I am convinced, that whatever power they may have on the paffions,

fions, they do not derive it from any reprefentation raised in the mind of the things for which they stand. As compositions, they are not real effences, and hardly cause, I think, any real ideas. No body, I believe, immediately on hearing the founds, virtue, liberty, or honour, conceives any precise notion of the particular modes of action and thinking, together with the mixt and simple ideas, and the several relations of them for which these words are substituted; neither has he any general idea, compounded of them; for if he had, then some of those particular ones, though indistinct perhaps, and confused, might come soon to be perceived. But this, I take it, is hardly ever the case. For put yourself upon analyfing one of these words, and you must reduce it from one fet of general words to another, and then into the simple abstracts and aggregates, in a much longer feries than may be at first imagined, before any real idea emerges to light, before you come to discover any thing like the first principles of fuch compositions; and when you have made such a discovery of the original ideas, the effect of the composition is utterly

utterly loft. A train of thinking of this fort, is much too long to be purfued in the ordinary ways of conversation, nor is it at all necessary that it should. Such words. are in reality but mere founds; but they are founds, which being used on particular occasions, wherein we receive some good, or suffer some evil, or see others affected with good or evil; or which we hear applied to other interesting things or events: and being applied in fuch a variety of cases that we know readily by habit to what things they belong, they produce in the mind, whenever they are afterwards mentioned, effects similar to those of their occasions. The founds being often used without reference to any particular occasion, and carrying still their first impressions, they at last utterly lose their connection with the particular occasions that gave rife to them; yet the found without any annexed notion continues to operate as before,

## S E C T. III. General words before IDEAS.

R. Locke has somewhere observed with his usual sagacity, that most general words, those belonging to virtue and vice, good and evil, especially, are taught before the particular modes of action to which they belong are presented to the mind; and with them, the love of the one, and the abhorrence of the other; for the minds of children are so ductile. that a nurse, or any person about a child, by feeming pleafed or displeafed with any thing, or even any word, may give the difpolition of the child a fimilar turn. When afterwards, the several occurrences in life come to be applied to these words; and that which is pleasant often appears under the name of evil; and what is disagreeable to nature is called good and virtuous; a strange confusion of ideas and affections arises in the minds of many; and an appearance of no small contradiction between their notions and their actions. There are many, who love virtue, and who detest vice.

vice, and this not from hypocrify or affectation, who notwithstanding very frequently act ill and wickedly in particulars without the least remorse; because these particular occasions never came into view, when the passions on the side of virtue were so warmly affected by certain words heated originally by the breath of others; and for this reason, it is hard to repeat certain sets of words, though owned by themselves unoperative, without being in some degree affected, especially if a warm and affecting tone of voice accompanies them, as suppose,

Wise, valiant, generous, good and great.

These words, by having no application, ought to be unoperative; but when words commonly sacred to great occasions are used, we are affected by them even without the occasions. When words which have been generally so applied are put together without any rational view, or in such a manner that they do not rightly agree with each other, the style is called bombast. And it requires in several cases much good sense and experience to be guarded

guarded against the force of such language; for when propriety is neglected, a greater number of these affecting words may be taken into the service, and a greater variety may be indulged in combining them.

### SECT. IV. The effect of WORDS.

F words have all their possible extent of power, three effects arise in the mind of the hearer. The first is, the found; the fecond, the picture, or representation of the thing fignified by the found; the third is, the affection of the foul produced by one or by both of the foregoing. Compounded ab-Arast words, of which we have been speaking, (honour, justice, liberty, and the like.) produce the first and the last of these effects, but not the second. Simple abstracts. are used to fignify some one simple idea without much adverting to others which may chance to attend it, as blue, green, hot, cold, and the like; these are capable of affecting all three of the purpoles of words; as the aggregate words, man, castle, horse, &c. are in a yet higher degree.

gree. But I am of opinion, that the most general effect even of these words, does not arise from their forming pictures of the several things they would represent in the imagination; because on a very diligent examination of my own mind, and getting others to consider theirs. I do not find that once in twenty times any fuch picture is formed, and when it is, there is most commonly a particular effort of the imagination for that purpole. But the aggregate words operate as I faid of the compound abstracts, not by presenting any image to the mind, but by having from use the same effect on being mentioned, that their original has when it is feen. Suppose we were to read a passage to this effect, " The river Danube rifes in a moift and mountainous foil in the heart of Germany, where winding to and fro it waters feveral principalities, until turning into Auftria and leaving the walls of Vienna it passes into Hungary; there with a vast flood augmented by the Saave and the Drave it quits Christendom, and rolling through the barbarous countries which border on Tartary, it enters by many mouths into the Black

Black fea." In this description many things are mentioned, as mountains, rivers, cities, the sea, &c. But let any body examine himself, and see whether he has had impressed on his imagination any pictures of a river, mountain, watery foil, Germany, Indeed it is impossible, in the rapidity and quick succession of words in conversation, to have ideas both of the sound of the word, and of the thing represented: belides some words expressing real essences, are fo mixed with others of a general and nominal import, that it is impracticable to jump from sense to thought, from particulars to generals, from things to words, in fuch a manner as to answer the purposes of life; nor is it necessary that we should.

#### SECT. V.

Examples that WORDS may affect without raising IMAGES.

I Find it very hard to persuade several that their passions are affected by words from whence they have no ideas; and yet harder to convince them, that in the ordinary course of conversation we are sufficiently

ently understood without raising any images of the things concerning which we speak. It seems to be an odd subject of dispute with any man, whether he has ideas in his mind or not. Of this at first view, every man, in his own forum, ought to judge without appeal. But strange as it may appear, we are often at a loss to know what ideas we have of things, or whether we have any ideas at all upon some subjects. It even requires a good deal of attention to be thoroughly fatisfied on this head. Since I wrote these papers I found two very firiking inflances of the possibility there is, that a man may hear words without having any idea of the things which they represent, and yet afterwards be capable of returning them to others, combined in a new way, and with great propriety, energy and instruction. The first instance, is that of Mr. Blacklock, a poet blind from his birth. Few men bleffed with the most perfect fight can describe visual objects with more spirit and justness than this blind man; which cannot possibly be attributed to his having a clearer conception of the things he describes than is common to other

other persons. Mr. Spence, in an elegant preface which he has written to the works of this poet, reasons very ingeniously, and, I imagine, for the most part very rightly, upon the cause of this extraordinary phoenominon; but I cannot altogether agree with him, that some improprieties in language and thought which occur in these poems have arisen from the blind poet's imperfect conception of vifual objects, fince fuch improprieties, and much greater, may be found in writers even of an higher class than Mr. Blacklock, and who, notwithflanding, possessed the faculty of seeing in its full perfection. Here is a poet doubtless as much affected by his own descriptions as any that reads them can be; and yet he is affected with this strong enthusiasm by things of which he neither has, nor can possibly have any idea further than that of a bare found; and why may not those who read his works be affected in the fame manner that he was, with as little of any real ideas of the things described? The second inftance is of Mr. Saunderson, profesfor of mathematics in the university of Cambridge. This learned man had acquired

quired great knowledge in natural philosophy, in aftronomy, and whatever sciences depend upon mathematical skill. What was the most extraordinary, and the most to my purpose, he gave excellent lectures upon light and colours; and this man taught others the theory of those ideas which they had, and which he himself undoubtedly had not. But it is probable, that the words red, blue, green, answered to him as well as the ideas of the colours themselves; for the ideas of greater or less degrees of refrangibility being applied to these words, and the blind man being infructed in what other respects they were found to agree or to disagree, it was as eafy for him to reason upon the words as if he had been fully mafter of the ideas. Indeed it must be owned he could make no new discoveries in the way of experiment. He did nothing but what we do every day in common discourse. When I wrote this last sentence, and used the words every day and common discourse, I had no images in my mind of any fuccession of time; nor of men in conference with each other; nor do I imagine that the reader N 2

will have any fuch ideas on reading it. Neither when I spoke of red, blue, and green, as well as of refrangibility, had I these several colours, or the rays of light passing into a different medium, and there diverted from their courfe, painted before me in the way of images. I know very well that the mind possesses a faculty of raising such images at pleasure; but then an act of the will is necessary to this; and in ordinary conversation or reading, it is very rarely that any image at all is excited in the mind. If I fay, " I shall go to "Italy next fummer," I am well underflood. Yet I believe no body has by this painted in his imagination the exact figure of the speaker passing by land or by water, or both; fometimes on horseback, sometimes in a carriage; with all the particu--lars of the journey. Still less has he any idea of Italy, the country to which I proposed to go; or of the greenness of the fields, the ripening of the fruits, and the warmth of the air, with the change to this from a different feafon, which are the ideas for which the word fummer is substituted; but least of all has he any idea from the word

word next, for this word stands for the idea of many fummers, with the exclusion of all but one; and furely the man who fays next fummer, has no images of fuch a fuccession, and such an exclusion. In short, it is not only of those ideas which are commonly called abstract, and of which no image at all can be formed, but even of particular real beings, that we converse without having any idea of them excited in the imagination; as will certainly appear on a diligent examination of our own minds. Indeed so little does poetry depend for its effect on the power of railing fenfible images, that I am convinced it would lofe a very considerable part of its energy, if this were the necessary result of all description, Because that union of affecting words which is the most powerful of all poetical instruments, would frequently lose its force along with its propriety and confishency, if the fenfible images were always excited: There is not perhaps in the whole Encid a more grand and laboured passage, than the description of Vulcan's cavern in Etna, and the works that are there carried on. Vingil N a

Virgil dwells particularly on the formation of the thunder which he describes unfinished under the hammers of the Cyclops. But what are the principles of this extraordinary composition?

Tres imbris torti radios, tres nubis aquosa. Addiderant; rutili tres ignis et alitis Austri; Fulgores nunc terrificos, sonitumque, metumque Miscebant operi, stammisque sequacibus iras. Three points of rain; three forks of bail conspire; Three arm'd with wind; and three were barb'd with fire.

The mass they temper'd thick with livid rays, Fear, wrath and terror, and the lightning's blaze.

PITT.

This feems to me admirably fublime; yet if we attend coolly to the kind of fensible images which a combination of ideas of this fort must form, the chimeras of madmen cannot appear more wild and abfurd than fuch a picture. "Ibree rays of twisted showers, three of " watry clouds, three of fire, and three of the " winged fouth wind; then mixed they in the " work terrific lightnings, and sound, and " fear, and anger, with pursuing flames." This strange composition is formed into a gross body; it is hammered by the Cyclops,

it is in part polished, and partly continues rough. The truth is, if poetry gives us a noble affemblage of words, corresponding to many noble ideas, which are connected by circumstances of time or place, or related to each other by cause and effect, or affociated in any natural way, they may be moulded together in any form, and perfectly answer their end. The picturesque connection is not demanded; because no real picture is formed; nor is the effect of the description at all the less upon this account. What is said of Helen by Priam and the old men of his council, is generally thought to give us the highest possible idea of that fatal beauty.

Oυ νεμισις, Τρωσς καὶ εὐκνημιδας Αχαιες,
Τοιηδ αμφι γυναικι πολυν χεονον αλγια πασχιιε:
Απως δ' αθαναίησι θεης ως ωπα εοικεν.

They cry'd, no wonder such celestial charms
For nine long years have set the world in arms;
What winning graces! what majestic mien!
She moves a goddess, and she looks a queen.

Here is not one word said of the particulars of her beauty; nothing which can in the least help us to any precise idea of her person; but yet we are much more touched by this manner of mentioning her, than by these long and laboured descriptions of He-

N 4

#### 272 On the SUBLIME

Ien, whether handed down by tradition, or formed by fancy, which are to be met with in some authors. I am sure it affects me much more than the minute description which Spencer has given of Belphebe; though I own that there are parts in that description, as there are in all the descriptions of that excellent writer, extremely fine and poetical. The terrible picture which Lucretius has drawn of religion, in order to display the magnanimity of his philosophical hero in opposing her, is thought to be designed with great boldness and spirit.

Humana ante oculos fæde cum vita jaceret,
In terris, oppressa gravi sub religione,
Que caput e cæli regionibus ostendebat
Horribili super aspectu mortalibus instans;
Primum Graius bomo mortaleis tollere contre
Est oculos ausus.——

What idea do you derive from so excellent a picture? none at all most certainly; neither has the poet said a single word which might in the least serve to mark a single limb or feature of the phantom, which he intended to represent in all the horrors imagination can conceive. In reality, poetry and rhethoric do not succeed in exact description

scription so well as painting does; their bufiness is to affect rather by sympathy than imitation; to display rather the effect of things on the mind of the speaker, or of others, than to present a clear idea of the things themselves. This is their most extensive province, and that in which they succeed the best.

#### SECT VI

POETRY not ffrictly an imitative arts

HENCE we may observe that, poetry taken in its most general sense; cannot with strict propriety be called an art of imitation. It is indeed an imitation so far as it describes the manners and passions of men which their words can express; where, animi motus effert interprete lingua. There it is strictly imitation; and all merely dramatic poetry is of this sort. But descriptive poetry operates chiefly by substitution; by the means of sounds, which by custom have the effect of realities. Nothing is an imitation further than as it resembles some other thing; and words undoubtedly have no sort of resemblance to the ideas for which they stand.

## SECT. VII.

How WORDS influence the passions.

OW, as words affect not by any original power, but by representation, it might be supposed, that their influence over the passions should be but light; yet it is quite otherwise; for we find by experience that eloquence and poetry are as capable, nay much more capable of making deep and lively impressions than any other arts, and even than nature itself in very many cases. And this arises chiefly from these three causes. First, that we take an extraordinary part in the passions of others, and that we are easily affected and brought into sympathy by any tokens which are shewn of them; and there are no tokens which can express all the circumstances of most passions so fully as words; so that if a person speaks upon any subject, he can not only convey the subject to you, but likewife the manner in which he is himfelf affected by it. Certain it is, that the influence of most things on our passions is not so much from the things themselves, as from our opini-

opinions concerning them; and these again depend very much on the opinions of other men, conveyable for the most part by words only. Secondly, there are many things of a very affecting nature, which can feldom occur in the reality, but the words which represent them often do; and thus they have an opportunity of making a deep impression and taking root in the mind, whilft the idea of the reality was transient; and to some perhaps never really occurred in any shape, to whom it is notwithstanding very affecting, as war, death, famine, &c. Befides, many ideas, have never been at all presented to the senses of any men but by words, as God, angels, devils, heaven and hell, all of which have however a great influence over the passions. Thirdly, by words we have it in our power to make such. combinations as we cannot possibly do otherwife. By this power of combining we are: able, by the addition of well-chosen circumstances, to give a new life and force to the fimple object. In painting we may reprefent any fine figure we please; but we never can give it those enlivening touches which it may receive from words. To represent an angel in a picture, you can only

draw a beautiful young man winged; but what painting can furnish out any thing so grand as the addition of one word, "the " angel of the Lord?" It is true, I have here no clear idea, but these words affect the mind more than the fensible image did, which is all I contend for. A picture of Priam dragged to the altar's foot, and there murdered, if it were well executed, would undoubtedly be a very affecting piece, but there are certain aggravating circumstances which it could never represent.

Sanguine fædantem quos ipfe sacraverat ignes.

-polluting with bis gore Thefe flames, be ballow'd at the forines before. PITT.

As a further instance, let us consider those lines of Milton, where he describes the travels of the fallen angels through their difmal habitation.

-Through many a dark and dreary vale They pass'd, and many a region dolorous; O'er many a frozen, many a fiery Alp; Rocks, caves, takes, fens, bogs, dens and Sbades of death.

A universe of death.

Here is displayed the force of union in Rocks, caves, lakes, dens, bogs, fens and shades; which which yet would lose the greatest part of their effect, if they were not the

Rocks, caves, lakes, dens, bogs, fens and shades ---- of Death.

This idea or this affection caused by a word, which nothing but a word could annex to the others, raifes a very great degree of the fublime; and this fublime is raised yet higher by what follows, a " universe of Death." Here are again two ideas not prefentible but by language; and an union of them great and amazing beyond conception; if they may properly be called ideas which present no distinct image to the mind :- but still it will be difficult to conceive how words can move the passions which belong to real objects, without representing these objects clearly. This is difficult to us, because we do not sufficiently diffinguish, in our observations upon language, between a clear expression, and a strong expression. These are frequently confounded with each other, though they are in reality extremely different. The former

former regards the understanding; the latter belongs to the passions. The one describes a thing as it is; the other describes it as it is felt. Now, as there is a moving tone of voice, an impassioned countenance, an agitated gesture, which affect independently of the things about which they are exerted, fo there are words, and certain difpolitions of words which being peculiarly devoted to passionate subjects, and always used by those who are under the influence of any passion; they touch and move us more than those which far more clearly and distinctly express the subject matter. We yield to fympathy, what we refuse to defcription. The truth is, all verbal description, merely as naked description, though never fo exact, conveys fo poor and infufficient an idea of the thing described, that it could scarcely have the smallest effect, if the speaker did not call in to his aid those modes of speech that mark a strong and lively feeling in himself. Then, by the contagion of our passions, we catch a fire already kindled in another, which probably might never have been struck out by the

the object described. Words, strongly conveying the passions, by those means which we have already mentioned, fully compensate for their weakness in other refpects. It may be observed that very polished languages, and such as are praised for their superior clearness and perspicuity, are generally deficient in strength. The French language has that perfection, and that defect. Whereas the oriental tongues. and in general the languages of most unpolished people, have a great force and energy of expression; and this is but natural. Uncultivated people are but ordinary observers of things, and not critical in diftinguishing them; but, for that reason, they admire more, and are more affected with what they fee, and therefore express themselves in a warmer and more passionate manner. If the affection be well conveyed, it will work its effect without any clear idea; often without any idea at all of the thing which has originally given rife to it.

It might be expected from the fertility of the subject, that I should consider poetry etry as it regards the sublime and beautiful more at large; but it must be observed that in this light it has been often and well handled already. It was not my defign to enter into the criticism of the sublime and beautiful in any art, but to attempt to lay down such principles as may tend to ascertain, to distinguish, and to form a fort of flandard for them; which purposes I thought might be best effected by an enquiry into the properties of such things in nature as raise love and astonishment in us; and by shewing in what manner they operated to produce these passions. Words were only so far to be considered, as to hew upon what principle they were capable of being the representatives of these natural things, and by what powers they were able to affect us often as ftrongly as the things they represent, and sometimes much more strongly.



The END.

### VINDICATION

OF

## NATURAL SOCIETY:

OR,

A View of the MISERIES and EVILS arising to Mankind from every species of

### ARTIFICIAL SOCIETY.

In a LETTER to Lord \*\*\*\*

By a late NOBLE WRITER.

The THIRD EDITION,

With a New PREFACE.

#### DUBLIN:

Printed by and for SARAH COTTER, under Dick's Coffee-house in Skinner-Row. M,DCC,LXVI.



data si da san Ligografia

Toy or a single

# PREFACE.

BEFORE the Philosophical Works of Lord BOLINGBROKE had appeared, great Things were expected from the Leifure of a Man, who from the splendid Scene of Action, in which his Talents had enabled him to make so conspicuous a Figure, had retired to employ those Talents in the Investigation of Truth. Philosophy began to congratulate herself upon such a Proselyte from the World of Bufiness, and hoped to have extended her Power under the Auspices of such a Leader. In the midst of these pleasing Expectations, the Works themselves at last appeared in full Body, and with great Pomp. Those who searched in them for new discoveries in the Mysteries of Nature; those who expected something which might explain or direct the Operations of the Mind; those who hoped to see Morality illustrated and enforced; those A 2

those who looked for new Helps to Society and Government; those who defired to see the Characters and Passions of Mankind delineated; in short all who consider such Things as Philosophy, and require some of them at least, in every philosophical Work, all these were certainly disappointed; they found the Land-marks of Science precifely in their former Places: And they thought they received but a poor recompence for this disappointment, in seeing every Mode of Religion attacked in a lively Manner, and the foundation of every Virtue, and of all Government, sapped with great Art and much Ingenuity. What Advantage do we derive from fuch Writings? What Delight can a Man find in employing a Capacity which might be usefully exerted for the noblest Purposes, in a fort of sullen Labour, in which if the Author could succeed, he is obliged to own, that nothing could be more fatal to Mankind than his Success.?

I cannot conceive how this fort of Writers propose to compass the Designs they pretend to have in View, by the instruments which they employ. Do they pretend to exalt the Mind of Man, by prov-

ing him no better than a Beaft? Do they think to enforce the Practice of Virtue, by denying that Vice and Virtue are distinguished by good or ill Fortune here, or by Happiness or Misery hereafter? Do they imagine they shall increase our Piety, and Reliance on God, by exploding his Providence, and infifting that He is neither just. nor good? Such are the Doctrines which, fometimes concealed, fometimes openly and fully avowed, are found to prevail throughout the Writings of Lord Boling-BROKE; and such are the Reasonings which this noble Writer and feveral others have been pleased to dignify with the Name of Philosophy. If these are delivered in a specious Manner, and in a Style above the common, they cannot want a Number of Admirers of as much Docility as can bewished for in Disciples. To these the Editor of the following little Piece had addreffed it: there is no reason to conceal the Defign of it any longer.

The Delign was, to shew that, without the Exertion of any considerable Forces, the same Engines which were employed for the Destruction of Religion, might be employed with equal Success for the Subver-

fion of Government; and that specious Arguments might be used against those Things which they, who doubt of every thing elfe. will never permit to be questioned. an Observation which I think Ifocrates makes in one of his Orations against the Sophists, That it is far more easy to maintain a wrong Cause, and to support paradoxical Opinions to the Satisfaction of a common Auditory, than to establish a doubtful Truth by folid and conclusive Arguments. When Men find that fomething can be faid in favour of what, on the very Propofal, they have thought utterly indefenfible, they grow doubtful of their own Reason; they are thrown into a fort of pleasing Surprize; they run along with the Speaker, charmed and captivated to find such a plentiful Harvest of Reasoning, where all seemed barren and unpromising. This is the Fairy Land of Philosophy. And it very frequently happens, that those pleasing Impressions on the Imagination, sublist and produce their Effect, even after the Understanding has been fatisfied of their unsubstantial Nature. There is a fort of Gloss upon ingenious Falsehoods, that dazzles the Imagination,

but which neither belongs to, nor becomes the fober Aspect of Truth. I have met with a Quotation in Lord Coke's Reports that pleased me very much, though I do not know from whence he has taken it: " Interdum fucata falsitas, (says he) in mul-" tis est probabilior, et sæpe rationibus vincit " nudam veritatem." In such Cases, the Writer has a certain Fire and Alacrity inspired into him by a Consciousness, that let it fare how it will with the Subject, his Ingenuity will be fure of Applause; and this Alacrity becomes much-greater if he acts upon the offensive, by the Impetuosity that always accompanies an Attack, and the unfortunate propenfity which Mankind have to the finding and exaggerating Faults. The Editor is fatisfied that a Mind which has no Restraint from a Sense of its own Weakness, of its subordinate Rank in the Creation, and of the extreme Danger of letting the Imagination loofe upon some Subjects, may very plaulibly attack every thing the most excellent and venerable; that it would not be difficult to criticife the Creation itself; and that if we were to examine the divine Fabrics by our Ideas of Reason and Fitness, and to use the same Method AA

Method of Attack by which some Men have affaulted Revealed Religion, we might with as good Colour, and with the same Success, make the Wisdom and Power of God in his Creation appear to many no better than Foolishness. There is an Air of Plausibility which accompanies vulgar Reasonings and Notions taken from the beaten Circle of ordinary Experience, that is admirably fuited to the narrow Capacities of some, and to the Laziness of others. But this Advantage is in a great measure loft, when a painful, comprehensive Survey of a very complicated Matter, and which requires a great Variety of Confiderations, is to be made; when we must seek in a profound Subject, not only for Arguments, but for new Materials of Argument, their Measures and their Method of Arrangement; when we must go out of the Sphere of our ordinary Ideas, and when we can never walk fure but by being fenfible of our Blindness. And this we must do, or we do nothing, whenever we examine the Refult of a Reason which is not our own. Even in Matters which are, as it were, just within our Reach, what would become of the

the World if the Practice of all moral Duties, and the Foundations of Society, rested upon having their Reasons made clear and demonstrative to every Individual?

The Editor knows that the Subject of this Letter is not so fully handled as obviously it might; it was not his Design to say all that could possibly be said. It had been inexcusable to fill a large Volume with the Abuse of reason: nor would such an abuse have been tolerable even for a few Pages, if some Under-plot, of more Consequence than the apparent Design, had not been carried on.

Some Persons have thought that the Advantages of the State of Nature ought to have been more fully displayed. This had undoubtedly been a very ample Subject for Declamation; but they do not consider the Characters of the piece. The Writers against Religion, whilst they oppose every System, are wisely careful never to set up any of their own. If some Inaccuracies in Calculation, in Reasoning, or in Method be found, perhaps these will not be looked upon as Faults by the Admirers of Lord Bolingeroke; who will, the Editor

is afraid, observe much more of his Lord-ship's Character in such Particulars of the following Letter, than they are to find of that rapid Torrent of an impetuous and overbearing Eloquence, and the Variety of rich Imagery for which that Writer is just-by admired.

switch grown to purpose of appell it regard

que apet par de agrante Delien, bla not

want white our hard sand

folia the Characters on the

Thomas Try to dutil

racting Calculation on the second

self-led educal campus bases

elorano errori al areas "village con como esta

on total nid more a closed we Boi

A LET-

A

# LETTER

TO

# LORD \*\*\*\*.

Shall I venture to say, my Lord, that in our late Conversation, you were inclined to the Party which you adopted, rather by the Feelings of your good Nature, than by the Conviction of your Judgment? We laid open the Foundations of Society; and you feared, that the Curiosity of this Search might endanger the Ruin of the whole Fabric. You would readily have allowed my Principle, but you dreaded the Consequences; you thought, that having once entered into these reasonings, we might be carried insensibly and irresistibly further than at first we could either have imagined or wished. But for

my part, my LORD, I then thought, and am still of the same Opinion, that Error, and not Truth of any kind, is dangerous; that ill Conclusions can only flow from false. Propositions; and that, to know whether any proposition be true or false, it is a preposterous Method to examine it by its apparent Consequences.

These were the Reasons which induced me to go so far into that Enquiry; and they are the Reasons which direct me in all my Enquiries. I had indeed often resected on that Subject before I could prevail upon myself to communicate my Resections to any body. They were generally melancholy enough; as those usually are which carry us beyond the mere Surface of Things, and which would undoubtedly make the Lives of all thinking Men extremely miserable, if the same Philosophy which caused the Grief, did not at the same Time administer the Comfort.

On considering political Societies, their Origin, their Constitution, and their Effects, I have sometimes been in a good deal more than Doubt, whether the Creator did ever really intend Man for a State of Happiness.

He has mixed in his Cup a Number of natural Evils, (in spite of the Boasts of Stoicism they are Evils) and every Endeavour which the Art and Policy of Mankind has . used from the Beginning of the World to this Day, in order to alleviate, or cure them, has only served to introduce new Mischiefs, or to aggravate and inflame the old. Besides this, the Mind of Man itself is too active and reftless a Principle ever to fettle on the true Point of Quiet. It discovers every Day some craving Want in a. Body, which really wants but little. It every Day invents some new artificial Rule to. guide that Nature which if left to itself were the best and surest Guide. It finds out imaginary Beings prescribing imaginary Laws; and then, it raises imaginary Terrors to support a Belief in those Beings, and an Obedience to those Laws. Many Things have been faid, and very well undoubtedly, on the Subjection in which we should preserve our Bodies to the Government of our Understanding; but enough has not been faid upon the Restraint which our bodily Necesfities ought to lay on the extravagant Sublimities, and excentric Rovings of our Minds. The Body, or as some love to call

it, our inferior Nature, is wifer in its own plain Way, and attends its own Business more directly than the Mind with all its boasted Subtilty.

In the State of Nature, without question, Mankind was subject to many and great Inconveniencies. Want of Union, Want of mutual Affiftance. Want of a common Arbitrator to refort to in their Differences: These were Evils which they could not but have felt pretty feverely on many Occasions. The original Children of the Earth lived with their Brethren of the other Kinds in much Equality. Their Diet must have been confined almost wholly to the vegetable Kind; and the same Tree, which in its flourishing State produced them Berries, in its Decay gave them an Habitation. The mutual Defires of the Sexes uniting their Bodies and Affections, and the Children, which were the Results of their Intercourses, introduced first the Notion of Society, and taught its Conveniencies. This Society, founded in natural Appetites and Instincts, and not in any politive Institution, I shall call Natural Society. Thus far Nature went, and succeeded; but Man would go further. The great Error

Error of our Nature is, not to know where to stop, not to be satisfied with any reasonable Acquirement; not to Compound with our Condition; but to lose all we have gained by an insatiable Pursuit after more. Man found a considerable Advantage by this Union of many Persons to form one Family; he therefore judged that he would find his Account proportionably in an Union of many Families into one Body politic. And as Nature had formed no Bond of Union to hold them together, he supplied this defect by Laws.

This is Political Society: And hence the Sources of what are usually called States, civil Societies, or Governments; into some Form of which, more extended or restrained, all Mankind have gradually fallen. And fince it has so happened, and that we owe an implicit Reverence to all the Institutions of our ancestors, we shall consider these Institutions with all that Modesty with which we ought to conduct ourselves in examining a received Opinion; but with all that Freedom and Candor which we owe to Truth wherever we find it, or however it may contradict our own Notions, or oppose

our own Interests. There is a most absurd and audacious Method of reasoning avowed by some Bigots and Enthusiasts, and through Fear affented to by some wifer and better Men; it is this. They argue against a fair Discussion of popular Prejudices, because, say they, tho' they should be found : without any reasonable Support, yet the Discovery might be productive of the most dangerous. Consequences. Absurd and blasphemous Notion! as if all Happiness. was not connected with the Practice of Virtue, which necessarily depends upon the Knowledge of Truth; that is, upon, the Knowledge of those unalterable Relations which Providence has ordained that every thing should bear to every other. These Relations, which are Truth itself, the Foundation of Virtue, and consequently, the only Measures of Happiness, should be likewise the only Measures by which we should direct our Reasoning. To these we should conform in good Earnest; and not think to force Nature, and the whole Order of her System, by a Compliance with our Pride, and Folly, to conform to our artificial Regulations. It is by a Conformity :

formity to this Method we owe the Difcovery of the few Truths we know, and the little Liberty and rational Happiness we enjoy. We have something fairer Play than a Reasoner could have expected formerly; and we derive Advantages from it which are very visible.

The Fabric of Superstition has in this our Age and Nation received much ruder Shocks than it had ever felt before; and through the Chinks and Breaches of our Prison, we see such Glimmerings of Light, and feel such refreshing Airs of Liberty, as daily raise our Ardor for more. The Miferies derived to Mankind from Superstition, under the Name of Religion, and of ecclefiastical Tyranny under the Name of Church Government, have been clearly and usefully exposed. We begin to think and to act from Reason and from Nature alone. This is true of feveral, but still is by far the Majority in the same old State of Blindness and Slavery; and much is it to be feared that we shall perpetually relapse, whilft the real productive Cause of all this superstitious Folly, enthusiastical Nonsense, and holy Tyranny

Tyranny, holds a reverend Place in the Estimation even of those who are otherwise

enlightened.

Civil Government borrows a Strength from Ecclefiaftical; and artificial Laws receive a Sanction from artificial Revelati-The Ideas of Religion and Government are closely connected; and whilft we receive Government as a thing necesfary, or even useful to our Well-being, we shall in spite of us draw in, as a necessary, tho' undefirable Consequence, an artificial. Religion of some kind or other. To this. the Vulgar will always be voluntary Slaves; and even those of a Rank of Understanding fuperior, will now and then involuntarily feel its Influence. It is therefore of the deepest Concernment to us to be fet right in this Point; and to be well fatisfied whether civil Government be such a. Protector from natural Evils, and fuch a Nurse and Increaser of Blesfings, as those of warm Imaginations promife. In fuch a Discussion, far am I from proposing in the least to reflect on our most wise Form of Government; no more than I would in the"

the freer Parts of my philosophical Writings, mean to object to the Piety, Truth and Perfection of our most excellent Church. Both I am fensible have their Foundations on a Rock. No Discovery of Truth can prejudice them. On the contrary, the more closely the Origin of Religion and Government are examined, the more clearly their Excellencies must appear. They come purified from the Fire. My business is not with them. Having entered a Protest against all Objections from these Quarters, I may the more freely enquire from Hiftory and Experience, how far Policy has contributed in all Times to alleviate those Evils which Providence, that perhaps has deligned us for a State of Imperfection, has imposed; how far our phyfical Skill has cured our conflitutional Diforders; and whether, it may not have introduced new ones, curable perhaps by no Skill.

In looking over any State to form a Judgment on it; it presents itself in two Lights, the external and the internal. The first, that Relation which it bears in point of Friendship or Enmity to other States:

The

The fecond, that Relation its component Parts, the Governing, and the Governed, bear to each other. "The first Part of the external View of all States, their Relation as Friends, makes fo trifling a Figure in History, that I am very forry to fay, it. affords me but little Matter on which to expatiate. The good Offices done by one Nation to its Neighbour (a); the Support given in public Distress; the Re-' lief afforded in general Calamity; the Protection granted in emergent Danger; the mutual Return of Kindneis and Civility, would afford a very ample and very pleafing Subject for History. But, alas! all the History of all Times, concerning all Nations, does not afford Matter enough to fill ten Pages, though it should be spun out by the Wire drawing Amplification of a. Guicciardini himself. The glaring Side is

<sup>(</sup>a) Had his Lordship lived to our Days, to have feen the noble Relief given by this Nation to the distressed Portuguese, he had perhaps owned this Part of his Argument a little weakened, but we do not think ourselves intitled to alter his Lordship's Words, but that we are bound to follow him exactly.

that of Enmity. War is the Matter which fills all History, and consequently the only, or almost the only view in which we can fee the External of political Society is in a hostile Shape; and the only Actions, to which we have always feen, and still fee all of them intent, are fuch, as tend to the Destruction of one another. War, fays Machiavel, ought to be the only Study of a Prince; and by a Prince, he means every fort of State however constituted. He ought, says this great political Doctor, to consider Peace only as a Breathing-time, which gives him leifure to contrive, and furnishes Ability to execute military Plans. A Meditation on the Conduct of political Societies made old Hobbes imagine, that War was the State of Nature; and truly, if a Man judged of the Individuals of our Race by their Conduct when united and packed into Nations and Kingdoms, he might imagine that every fort of Virtue was unnatural and foreign to the Mind of Man.

The first Accounts we have of Mankind are but so many Accounts of their Butcheries.

ries. All Empires have been cemented in Blood; and in those early Periods when the Race of Mankind began first to form themfelves into Parties and Combinations, the first Effect of the Combination, and indeed the End for which it feems purpofely formed, and best calculated, is their mutual Destruction. All antient History is dark and uncertain. One thing however is clear. There were Conquerors, and Conquests, in those Days; and consequently, all that Devastation, by which they are formed, and all that Oppression by which they are maintained. We know little of Sefostris, but that he led out of Egypt an Army of above 700,000 Men; that he over-ran the Mediterranean Coast as far as Colchis; that in some Places, he met but little Resistance, . and of course shed not a great deal of Blood; but that he found in others, a People who knew the Value of their Liberties, and fold them dear. Whofoever confiders the Army this Conqueror headed, the Space he traversed, and the Opposition he frequently met; with the natural Accidents of Sickness, and the Dearth and Badness of Provision to which he must have been subject

in the Variety of Climates and Countries his March lay through, if he knows any thing, he must know, that even the Conqueror's Army must have suffered greatly; and that, of this immense Number, but a very small Part could have returned to enjoy the Plunder accumulated by the Loss of fo many of their Companions, and the Devaftation of fo confiderable a Part of the World. Confidering, I say, the vast Army headed by this Conqueror, whose unwieldy Weight was almost alone sufficient to wear down its Strength, it will be far from Excess to suppose that one half was loft in the Expedition. If this was the State of the Victorious, and, from the Circumstances, it must have been this at the least; the Vanquished must have had a much heavier Loss, as the greatest Slaughter is always in the Flight, and great Carnage did in those Times and Countries ever attend the first Rage of Conquest. It will therefore be very reasonable to allow on their account as much as, added to the Losses of the Conqueror, may amount to a Million of Deaths. and then we shall see this Conqueror, the oldest we have on the Records of History, (though, as we have observed before, the

the Chronology of these remote Times is extremely uncertain), opening the Scene by the Destruction of at least one Million of his Species, unprovoked but by his Ambition, without any Motive but Pride, Cruelty and Madness, and without any Benefit to himself; (for Justin expressly tells us, he did not maintain his Conquests) but solely to make so many People, in so distant Countries, feel experimentally, how severe a Scourge Providence intends for the human Race, when he gives one Man the Power over many, and arms his, naturally, impotent and feeble Rage, with the Hands of Millions, who know no common principle of Action, but a blind Obedience to the Paffions of their Ruler.

The next Personage, who figures in the Tragedies of this antient Theatre, is Semiramis: For we have no Particulars of Ninus, but that he made immense and rapid Conquests, which doubtless were not compassed without the usual Carnage. We see an Army of above three Millions employed by this martial Queen in a War against the Indians.

Indians. We see the Indians arming a yet greater; and we behold a War continued with much Fury and with various Success. This ends in the Retreat of the Queen, with scarce a third of the Troops employed in the Expedition; an Expedition, which at this rate must have cost two Millions of Souls on her part; and it is not unreasonable to judge that the Country which was the Seat of War, must have been an equal Sufferer. But I am content to detract from this, and to suppose that the Indians loft only half fo much, and then the Accompt stands thus: In this War alone, for Semiramis had other Wars) in this fingle Reign. and in this one Spot of the Globe, did three Millions of Souls expire, with all the horrid and fhocking Circumstances which attend all Wars, and in a Quarrel, in which none of the Sufferers could have the least rational Concern.

The Babylonian, Assyrian, Median, and Persian Monarchies must have poured out Seas of Blood in their Formation, and in their Destruction. The armies and Fleets of Xerxes, their Numbers, the glorious Stand made against them, and the unfor-

B

tunate Event of all his mighty Preparations, are known to every body. In this Expedition draining half Asia of its inhabitants, he led an Army of about two Millions to be flaughtered, and wasted, by a thousand fatal Accidents, in the same Place where his Predecessors had before by a fimilar Madness confumed the Flower of so many kingdoms, and wasted the Force of fo extensive an Empire. It is a cheap Calculation to fay, that the Perfian Empire in its Wars, against the Greeks and Scythians, threw away at least four Millions of its Subjects, to say nothing of its other Wars, and the Losses sustained in them. These were their Losses abroad; but the War was brought home to them, first by Agefilaus, and afterwards, by Alexander. I have not, in this Retreat, the Books neceffary to make very exact Calculations; nor is it necessary to give more than Hints to one of your Lordship's Erudition. You will recollect his uninterrupted Series of Success. You will run over his Battles. You will call to mind the Carnage which was made. You will give a Glance at the Whole, and you will agree with me, that

that to form this Hero no less than twelve hundred thousand Lives must have been facrificed; but no sooner had he fallen himfelf a Sacrifice to his Vices, than a thoufand Breaches were made for Ruin to enter, and give the last Hand to this Scene of Misery and Destruction. His Kingdom was rent and divided; which ferved to employ the more diffinct Parts to tear each other to pieces, and bury the whole in Blood and Slaughter. The Kings of Syria and of Egypt, the Kings of Pergamus and Macedon, without intermission worried each other for above two hundred Years; until at last a strong Power arising in the West, rushed in upon them and filenced their Tumults, by involving all the contending Parties in the same Destruction. It is little to fay, that the Contentions between the Successors of Alexander depopulated that Part of the World of at least two Millions.

The Struggle between the Macedonians and Greeks, and before that, the Disputes of the Greek Commonwealths among themselves, for an unprofitable Superiority, form one of the bloodiest Scenes in Histo-

Ty. One is aftonished how such a small Spot could furnish Men sufficient to facrifice to the pitiful Ambition of pofferfing five or fix thousand more Acres, or two or three more Villages. Yet to fee the Acrimony and Bitterness with which this was disputed between the Athenians and Lacedemonians: what Armies cut off: what Fleets funk, and burnt; what a Number of Cities facked, and their Inhabitants flaughtered, and captivated; one would be induced to believe the Decilion of the Fate of Mankind at leaft, depended upon it! But thefe Disputes ended as all such ever have done, and ever will do; in a real Weakness of all Parties; a momentary Shadow, and Dream of Power in forme one; and the Subjection of all to the Yoke of a ftranger, who knows . how to profit of their Divisions. This at least was the Case of the Greeks; and fure from the earliest Accounts of them to their Absorption into the Roman Empire, we cannot judge that their intestine Divisions, and their foreign Wars, confumed less than three Millions of their Inhabitants.

What

What an Aceldama, what a Field of blood Sicily has been in antient times, whilft the Mode of its Government was controverted between the republican and tyrannical Parties, and the Possession struggled for by the Natives, the Greeks, the Carthaginians, and the Romans, your Lordship will eafily recollect. You will remember the total Destruction of such Bodies as an Army of 300,000 Men. You will find every Page of its History dyed in Blood. and blotted and confounded by Tumults, Rebellions, Massacres, Assassinations, Proscriptions, and a Series of Horror beyond the Histories perhaps of any other Nation in the World; though the Histories of all nations are made up of similar Matter. once more excuse myself in point of exactness for want of Books. But I shall eftimate the Slaughters in this Island but at two Millions; which your Lordship will find much short of the Reality.

Let us pass by the Wars, and the Consequences of them, which wasted Grecia-Magna, before the Roman Power prevailed in that Part of Italy. They are perhaps

belong acided a Bis on to the charges:

exaggerated; therefore I shall only rate them at one Million. Let us haften to open that great Scene which establishes the Roman Empire, and forms the grand Catastrophe of the antient Drama. This empire, whilft in its Infancy, began by an Effusion of Human Blood scarcely credible. The neighbouring little States teemed for new Destruction: the Sabines, the Samnites, the Æqui, the Volsci, the Hetrurians, were broken by a Series of Slaughter which had no interruption, for fome Hundreds of Years; Slaughter which upon all Sides confumed more than two Millions of the wretched People. The Gauls rushed into Italy about this Time, added the total Destruction of their own Armies of those of the antient Inhabitants. In short, it were hardly possible to conceive a more horrid and bloody Picture, If that which the Punic Wars that enfued foon after did not present one, that far exceeds it. Here we find that Climax of Devastation, and Ruin, which seemed to shake the whole Earth. The Extent of this War which vexed fo many Nations, and both Elements, and the Havock of the Human Species caused

in both, really aftonishes beyond Expression, when it is nakedly confidered, and those Matters which are apt to divert our Attention from it, the Characters, Actions, and Deligns of the Persons concerned, are not taken into the Accompt. These Wars, I. mean those called the Punic Wars, could not have flood the human Race in less than three Millions of the Species. And yet this forms but a Part only, and a very fmall Part, of the Havock caused by the Roman Ambition. The War with Mitbridates was very little less bloody; that Prince cut off at one Stroke 150,000 Romans by a Massacre. In that War Sylla destroyed 300,000 Men at Cheronea. He defeated Mitbridates' Army under Dorilaus, and flew 300,000. This great and unfortunate Prince lost another 300,000 before Cyzicum. In the Course of the War he: had innumerable other Losses; and having many Intervals of Success, he revenged them severely. He was at last totally overthrown; and he crushed to Pieces the King of Armenia his Ally by the Greatness of his Ruin. All who had Connexions with him shared the same Fate. The merci-B 4

merciles Genius of Sylla had its full Scope; and the Streets of Athens were not the only ones which run with blood. At this Peried, the Sword, glutted with foreign Slaughter, turned its Edge upon the Bowels of the Roman Republic itself; and presented a Scene of Cruelties and Treasons enough almost to obliterate the Memory of all the external Devastations. I intended, my LORD, to have proceeded in a Sort of Method in estimating the Numbers of Mankind cut off in these Wars which we have on Record. But I am obliged to alter my Delign. Such a tragical Uniformity of Havock and Murder would difgust your Lordship as much as it would me; and I confess I already feel my eyes ake by keeping them fo long intent on fo bloody a Profect. I shall observe little on the Servile, the Social, the Gallic, and Spanish Wars; nor upon those with Jugurtha, nor Antiochus, nor many others equally important, and carried on with equal Fury. The Butcheries of Julius Cafar alone, are calculated by some body else; the Numbers

he has been a means of destroying have been reckoned at 1,200,000. But to give your Lordship an idea that may serve as a Standard, by which to measure, in some Degree, the others; you will turn your Eyes on Judea; a very inconsiderable Spot of the earth in itself, though ennobled by the singular Events which had their Rise in

that Country.

This Spot happened, it matters not here by what Means, to become at several Times extremely populous, and to supply Men for Slaughters scarcely credible, if other well known and well attested ones had not given them a Colour. The first settling of the Jews here, was attended with an almost entire Extirpation of all the sormer inhabitants. Their own civil Wars, and those with their petty Neighbours, consumed vast Multitudes almost every year for several Centuries; and the Irruptions of the Kings of Babylon and Affordia made immense Ravages. Yet we have their History but partially, in an indistinct consused Manner; so that I shall only throw the strong Point of Light upon that Part which coincides with Roman His-

B. 55

tory, and of that Part only on the Point of Time when they received the great and final Stroke which made them no more a Nation: a Stroke which is allowed to have cut off little less than two Millions of that people. I say nothing of the Loppings made from the Stock whilst it stood; nor from the Suckers that grew out of the old Root ever fince. But if in this inconsiderable Part of the Globe, fuch a Carnage has been made in two or three short Reigns, and that this Carnage, great as it is, makes but a minute Part of what the Histories of that People inform us they suffered; what shall we judge of Countries more extended, and which have waged Wars by far more confiderable?

Instances of this Sort compose the Uniform of History. But there have been Periods when no less than universal destruction to the Race of Mankind seems to have been threatened. When the Goths, the Vandals, and the Huns poured into Gaul, Italy, Spain, Greece, and Africa, carrying destruction before them as they advanced, and leaving horrid Desarts every where behind them.

them. Vastum ubique silentium, secreti colles, fumantia procul tecta; nemo exploratoribus obvius, is what Tacitus calls facies Victoriæ. It is always so; but was here emphatically fo. From the North proceeded the Swarms of Goths, Vandals, Huns, Oftrogoths, who ran towards the South into Africa itself, which suffered as all to the North had done. About this Time, another Torrent of Barbarians, animated by the same Fury, and encouraged by the fame Success, poured out of the South, and ravaged all to the North-East and West, to the remotest Parts of Persia on one hand, and to the Banks of the Loire, or further, on the other; deftroying all the proud and curious Monuments of human Art, that not even the Memory might feem to furvive of the former Inhabitants. What has been done fince, and what will continue to be done whilft the same Inducements to War continue, I shall not dwell upon. I shall only in one Word mention the horrid Effects of Bigotry and Avarice, in the conquest of Spanish America; a Conquest on a low Estimation effected by the Murder of ten Millions

Millions of the Species. I shall draw to a Conclusion of this Part, by making a general Calculation of the whole. I think I have actually mentioned above thirty-fix Millions. I have not particularized any more. I don't pretend to Exactness; therefore for the fake of a general View, I shall lay together all those actually slain in Battles, or who have perished in a no less miferable Manner by the other destructive Confequences of War, from the Beginning of the World to this Day, in the four Parts of it, at a thousand times as much; no exaggerated Calculation, allowing for Time and Extent. We have not perhaps spoke of the five hundredth Part: I am fure I have not of what is actually afcertained in History: but how much of these Butcheries are only expressed in Generals, what: Part of time history has never reached, and what vast Spaces of the habitable Globe it has not embraced, I need not: mention to your Lordship. I need not enlarge on these Torrents of silent and inglorious Blood which have glutted the thirsty Sands of Afric, or discoloured the polar Snow, or fed the savage Forests of America, for-

for fo many Ages of Continual War; shall I, to justify my Calculations from the charge of Extravagance, add to the Account of those Skirmishes which happen in all Wars, without being fingly of fufficient Dignity in mischief, to merit a Place in History, but which by their Frequency. compensate for this comparative Innocence; shall I inflame the account by these general Massacres which have devoured whole Cities and Nations; those wasting Pestilences, those consuming Famines, and all those Furies that follow in the Train of War? I have no need to exaggerate; and I have purposely avoided a Parade of Eloquence on this Occasion. I should despile it upon any Occasion; else in mentioning these Slaughters, it is obvious how much the whole might be heightened, by an affecting Description of the Horrors that attend the wasting of Kingdoms, and sacking of Cities. But I do not write to the Vulgar, nor to that which only governs the Vulgar, their Passions. I go upon a naked and moderate Calculation, just enough, without a pedantical Exactness, to give your Lordhip

Lordship some feeling of the Effects of Political Society. I charge, the whole of these Effects on Political Society. I avow the Charge and I shall presently make it good to your Lordship's Satisfaction. The Numbers I particularized are about thirty-fix Millions. Befides those killed in Battles I have fomething, not half what the Matter would have justified, but something I have faid, concerning the Confequences of War even more dreadful than that monftrous Carnage itself which shocks our Humanity, and almost staggers our Belief. So that allowing me in my Exuberance one Way, for my Deficiencies in the other, you will find me not unreasona-I think the Numbers of Men now ble. upon Earth are computed at 500 Millions at the most. Here the Slaughter of Mankind, on what you will call a small Calculation, amounts to upwards of feventy Times the Number of Souls this Day on the Globe. A Point which may furnish Matter of Reflection to one less inclined to draw Consequences than your Lordship.

I now come to shew, that Political Society is justly chargeable with much the greatest Part of this Destruction of the Species. To give the fairest Play to every side of the Question, I will own that there is a Haughtiness, and Fierceness in Human Nature, which will cause innumerable Broils, place Men in what Situation you please; but owning this, I still infift in Charging it to political Regulations, that these Broils are so frequent, so cruel, and attended with Consequences so deplorable. In a State of Nature, it had been impossible to find a Number of Men, sufficient for fuch Slaughters, agreed in the same bloody Purpose; or allowing that they might have come to fuch an Agreement, (an impossible Supposition) yet the Means that simple Nature has supplied them with, are by no means adequate to fuch an End; many Scratches, many Bruises undoubtedly would be received upon all hands; but only a few, a very few Deaths. Society, and Politics, which have given us these destructive Views, have given us also the Means of fatisfying them. From the earliest Dawnings of Policy to this Day, the Invention

Invention of Men has been sharpening and improving the Mystery of Murder, from the first rude Essays of Clubs and Stones. to the present Perfection of Gunnery, Cannoneering, Bombarding, Mining, and all these species of artificial, learned, and refined Cruelty, in which we are now fo expert, and which make a principal Part of what Politicians have taught us to believe is our principal Glory.

How far mere Nature would have carried us, we may judge by the Example of those Animals, who still follow her Laws, and even of those to whom she has given Dispositions more fierce, and Arms more terrible than ever she intended we should use. It is an incontestible Truth, that there is more Havock made in one Year by Men, of Men, than has been made by all the Lions, Tygers, Panthers, Ounces, Leopards, Hyenas, Rhinocerofes, Elephants, Bears, and Wolves, upon their feveral Species, fince the Beginning of the World; though these agree ill enough with each other, and have a much greater Proportion of Rage and Fury in their Compolition than we have. But with respect

Mankind! ye Orpheus's, Moseses, Minoses, Solons, Theseuses, Lycurguses, Numas! with respect to you be it spoken, your Regulations have done more Mischief in cold. Blood, than all the Rage of the siercest Animals in their greatest Terrors, or Furies, has ever done, or ever could do!

These Evils are not accidental. ever will take the Pains to confider the Nature of Society, will find they refult directly from its Constitution. For as Subordination, or in other Words, the Reciprocation of Tyranny, and Slavery, is requisite to support these Societies, the Interest, the Ambition, the Malice, or the Revenge, nay even the Whim and Caprice of one ruling Man among them, is enough to arm all the rest, without any private Views of their own, to the worst and blackest Purposes; and what is at once lamentable, and ridiculous, these Wretches engage under those Banners: with a Fury greater than if they were animated by Revenge for their own proper, Wrongs.

It is no less worth observing, that this artificial Division of Mankind, into separate Societies, is a perpetual Source in itself of' Hatred and Diffention among them. The Names which diftinguish them are enough to blow up Harred, and Rage. Examine-History; consult present Experience; and you will find, that far the greater Part of the Quarrels between several Nations, had scarce any other Occasion, than that these Nations were different Combinations of People, and called by different Names; to an Englishman, the Name of a Frenchman, a Spaniard, an Italian, much more a Turk, or a Tariar, raise of course Ideas of Hatred, and Contempt. If you would inspire this Compatriot of ours. with Pity or Regard, for one of these; would you not hide that Diffinction? you would not pray him to compassionate the poor Frenchman, or the unhappy Ger-Far from it; you would speak of him as a Foreigner, an Accident to which all are liable. You would represent him as a Man; one partaking with us of the fame common Nature, and subject to the same Law. There is something so averse from

from our Nature in these artificial political Distinctions, that we need no other Trumpet to kindle us to War, and Destruction. But there is something so benign and healing in the general Voice of Humanity, that maugre all our Regulations to prevent it, the simple Name of Man applied properly, never fails to work a salutary Effect.

This natural unpremeditated Effect of Policy on the unpossessed Passions of Mankind, appears on other Occasions. The very Name of a Politician, a Statelman, is fure to cause Terror and Hatred; it has always connected with it the Ideas of Treachery, Cruelty, Fraud and Tyranny; and those Writers who have faithfully unveiled the Mysteries of State-freemafonry, have ever been held in general Deteftation, for even knowing so perfectly a Theory fo detestable. The Case of Machiavel feems at first Sight something hard in that respect. He is obliged to bear the Iniquities of those whose Maxims and Rules of Government he published. His Speculation is more abhorred than their Practice.

But if there were no other Arguments against artificial Society than this I am going to mention, methinks it ought to fall by this one only. All Writers on the Science of Policy are agreed, and they agree with Experience, that all Governments must frequently infringe the Rules of Justice to support themselves; that Truth must give way to Dissimulation; Honesty. to Convenience; and Humanity itself to the reigning Interest. The whole of this Mystery of Iniquity is called the Reason of State. It is a Reason, which I own I cannot penetrate. What Sort of a Protection is this of the general Right, that is maintained by infringing the Rights of Particulars? What Sort of Justice is this, which is inforced by Breaches of its own. Laws? these Paradoxes I leave to be folyed by the able Heads of Legislators and Politicians, For my Part, I say What a plain Man would fay on fuch an Occasion: I can never believe, that any Institution agreeable to Nature, and proper for Mankind, could find it necessary, or even expedient in any Case whatsoever to do, what the best and worthiest Instincts of Mankind

warn us to avoid. But no wonder that what is fet up in Opposition to the State of Nature, should preserve itself by tramp-

ling upon the Law of Nature.

To prove, that this Sort of policed Societies is a Violation offered to Nature, and a Conftraint upon the human Mind, it needs only to look upon the fanguinary Measures, and Instruments of Violence which are every where used to support them. Let us take the Review of the Dungeons, Whips, Chains, Racks, Gibbets, with which every Society is abundantly stored, by which Hundreds of Victims are annually offered up to support a Dozen or two in Pride and Madness, and Millions in an abject Servitude and Dependence. There was a Time, when I looked with a reverential awe on these Mysteries of Policy; but Age, Experience, and Philosophy have rent the Veil; and I view this Sanctum Sanctorum, at least, without any enthusiastic Admiration. I acknowledge indeed, the Necessity of such a Proceeding in such Inflitutions: but I must have a very mean Opinion of Institutions where such Proceedings are necessary. It

It is a Misfortune, that in no Part of the Globe natural Liberty and natural Religion are to be found pure, and free from the Mixture of political Adulterations. Yet we have implanted in us by Providence Ideas, Axioms, Rules, of what is pious, just, fair, honest, which no political Crast, nor learned Sophistry, can entirely expel from our Breasts. By these we judge, and we cannot otherwise judge of the several artificial Modes of Religion and Society, and determine of them as they approach to, or recede from this Standard.

The simplest Form of Government is Despotism, where all the inferior Orbs of Power are moved merely by the Will of the Supreme, and all that are subjected to them, directed in the same Manner, merely by the occasional Will of the Magistrate. This Form, as it is the most simple, so it is infinitely the most general. Scarce any Part of the World is exempted from its Power. And in those few Places where Men enjoy what they call Liberty, it is continually in a totter-

ing Situation, and makes greater and greater Strides to that Gulph of Despotism which at last swallows up every Species of Government. This Manner of ruling being directed merely by the Will of the weakest, and generally the worst Man in the Society, becomes the most foolish and capricious Thing, at the same time that it is the most terrible and destructive that well can be conceived. In a Despotism the principal Person finds, that let the Want, Misery, and Indigence of his Subjects, be what they will, he can yet possess abundantly of every thing to gratify his most insatiable Wishes. He does more. He finds that these Gratifications increase in Proportion to the Wretchedness and Slavery of his Subjects. Thus encouraged both by Passion and Interest to trample on the public Welfare, and by his Station placed above both Shame and Fear, he proceeds to the most horrid and shocking Outrages upon Mankind. Their Persons become Victims of his Suspicions. The flightest Displeasure is Death; and a disagreeable Aspect is often as great a Crime as High-Treason. In the Court of

Nero, a Person of Learning, of unquestioned Merit, and of unsuspected Loyalty, was put to Death for no other Reason than that he had a pedantic Countenance which displeased the Emperor. This very Monfter of Mankind appeared in the Beginning of his Reign to be a Person of Virtue. Many of the greatest Tyrants on the Records of History have begun their Reigns in the fairest Manner. But the Truth is, this unnatural Power corrupts both the Heart, and the Understanding. And to prevent the least Hope of Amendment, a King is ever furrounded by a Crowd of infamous Flatterers, who find their Account in keeping him from the least Light of Reason, till all Ideas of Rectitude and Justice are utterly erased from his Mind. When Alexander had in his Fury Inhumanly butchered one of his best Friends, and bravest Captains; on the Return of Reason he began to conceive an Horror fuitable to the Guilt of such a Murder. In this Juncture, his Council came to his Affistance. But what did his Council? They found him out a Philosopher who gave him Comfort. And in what Manner did this philosopher comfort him for the Loss of such a Man, and heal his Conscience, flagrant with the Smart of such a Crime? You have the Matter at Length in Plutarch. He told him; " that let a Sove-" reign do what be will, all his Actions are " just and lawful, because they are bis." The Palaces of all Princes abound with fuch courtly Philosophers, The Confequence was fuch as might be expected. He grew every Day a Monster more abandoned to unnatural Luft, to Debauchery, to Drunkenness, and to Murder. And yet this was originally a great Man, of uncommon Capacity, and a strong propensity to Virtue. But unbounded Power proceeds Step by Step, until it have eradicated every laudable Principle. It has been remarked, that there is no Prince so bad, whose Favourites and Ministers are not worse. There is hardly any Prince without a Favourite, by whom he is governed in as arbitrary a Manner as he governs the Wretches subjected to him. Here the Tyranny is doubled. There are two Courts, and two Interests; both very different from the Interests of the People. The Favourite knows

knows that the Regard of a Tyrant is as unconstant and capricious as that of a Woman; and concluding his time to be fhort, he makes hafte to fill up the Measure of his Iniquity, in Rapine, in Luxury, and in Revenge. Every Avenue to the Throne is shut up. He oppresses, and Ruins the People, whilst he persuades the Prince, that these Murmurs raised by his own Oppressifion are the Effects of Difaffection to the Prince's Government. Then is the natural Violence of Despotism inflamed and aggravated by Hatred and Revenge. To deferve well of the State is a Crime against the Prince. To be popular, and to be a Traitor, are confidered as fynonimous Even Virtue is dangerous, as an afpiring Quality, that claims an effect in itself, and independent of the Countenance of the Court. What has been faid of the Chief, is true of the inferior Officers of this Species of Government; each in his Province exercifing the same Tyranny, and grinding the People by an Oppression, the more feverely felt, as it is near them and exercifed by base and subordinate Perfons. For the Gross of the People; they

are considered as a mere Herd of Cattle; and really in a little Time become no better; all Principle of honest Pride, all Sense of the Dignity of their Nature, is lost in The Day, fays Homer, their Slavery. which makes a Man a Slave, takes away half his Worth \* and in fact, he loses every impulse to Action, but that low and base one of Fear. - In this kind of Government human Nature is not only abused, and insulted, but it is actually degraded and funk into a Species of Brutality. The Consideration of this made Mr. Locke say, with great Justice, that a Government of this kind was worse than Anarchy; indeed it is so abhorred and detested by all who live under Forms that have a milder Appearance, that there is scarce a rational Man in Europe, that would not prefer Death to Afatic Despotism. Here then we have the Acknowledgment of a great Philosopher, that an irregular State of Nature is preferable to such a Government; we have the Confent of all sensible and generous Men, who carry it yet further, and avow that Death

ODYSS. Lib. 17.

<sup>\*</sup> Ήμισυ γὰς τ' αςετῆς ἀποαίνυλαι εὐςύοπα Ζεύς Ανίς., εὖτ ἄν μιν κατὰ δύλιον ἦμας ἔλησιν.

Death itself is preferable; and yet this Species of Government, so justly condemned, and so generally detested, is what infinitely the greater Part of Mankind groan under, and have groaned under from the Beginning. So that by sure and uncontested Principles, the greatest Part of the Governments on Earth must be concluded Tyrannies, Impostures, Violations of the Natural Rights of Mankind, and worse than the most disorderly Anarchies. How much other Forms exceed this, we shall consider immediately.

In all Parts of the World, Mankind however debased, retains still the Sense of Feeling; the Weight of Tyranny, at last, becomes insupportable; but the Remedy not
so easy; in general, the only Remedy by
which they attempt to cure the Tyranny,
is to change the Tyrant. This is and always was the Case for the greater Part. In
some Countries however, were found Men of
some Penetration; who discovered "that
"to live by one Man's Will, was the Cause
"of all Men's Misery." They therefore
changed their former Method, and assembling the Men in their several Societies,
the

the most respectable for their Understanding and Fortunes, they confided to them the Charge of the public Welfare. This originally formed what is called an Ariftocracy. They hoped it would be impossible that fuch a Number could ever join in any Delign against the general Good; and they promised themselves a great deal of Security and Happiness, from the united Counfels of so many able and experienced Perfons. But it is now found by abundant Experience, that Aristocracy, and a Despotism, differ but in Name; and that a People, who are in general excluded from any Share of the Legislative, are to all Intents and Purposes, as much Slaves, when Twenty, independent of them, govern, as when but One domineers. The Tyranny is even more felt, as every Individual of the Nobles has the Haughtiness of a Sultan, the People are more miserable, as they seem on the Verge of Liberty, from which they are for ever debarred; this fallacious Idea of Liberty, whilst it presents a vain Shadow of Happineis to the Subject, binds faster the Chains of his Subjection. What is left undone, by the natural Avarice and Pride CR

Pride of those who are raised above the others, is completed by their Suspicions, and their Dread of lofing an Authority, which has no support in the common Utility of the Nation. A Genoese, or a Venetian Republic, is a concealed Despotism; where you find the same Pride of the Rulers, the same bloody Maxims of a suspicious Policy. In one respect the Aristocracy is worse than the Despotism. A Body Politic, whilft it retains its Authority, never changes its Maxims; a Despotism, which is this Day horrible to a supreme Degree, by the Caprice natural to the Heart of Man. may, by the same Caprice otherwise exerted, be as lovely the next; in a Succession, it is possible to meet with some good Princes. If there have been Tiberius's Caligula's Nero's, there have been likewise the serener Days of Vespasian's Titus's, Trajans, and Antonine's; but a Body Politic is not influenced by Caprice or Whim; it proceeds in a regular Manner; its Succession is insensible; and every Man as he enters it, either has, or foon attains the Spirit of the whole Body. Never was it known, that an AristoAristocracy, which was haughty and tyrannical in one Century, became easy and mild in the next. In effect, the Yoke of this Species of Government is so galling, that whenever the People have got the least Power, they have shaken it off with the utmost indignation, and established a popular Form, And when they have not had strength enough to support themselves, they have thrown themselves into the arms of Despotism, as the more eligible of the two Evils. This latter was the Case of Denmark, which fought a Refuge from the Oppression of its Nobility, in the strong Hold of arbitrary Power. Poland has at present the Name of Republic, and it is one of the Aristocratic Form; but it is well known, that the little Finger of this Government, is heavier than the Loins of arbitrary Power in most Nations. The People are not only politically, but personally Slaves, and treated with the utmost Indignity. The Republic of Venice is somewhat more moderate; yet even there, fo heavy is the Aristocratic Yoke, that the Nobles have been obliged to enervate the Spirit of their Subjects by every Sort of Debauchery; they have denied them the Liberty C 4 .

Liberty of Reason, and they have made them amends, by what a base Soul will think a more valuable Liberty, by not only allowing but encouraging them to corrupt themselves in the most scandalous Manner. They confider their Subjects, as the Farmer does the Hog he keeps to feast upon. He holds him fast in his Stye, but allows him to wallow as much as he pleafes in his beloved Filth and Gluttony. So scandalously debauched a People as that of Venice, is to be met with no where else. High, Low, Men, Women, Clergy, and Laity are all alike. The ruling Nobility are no less afraid of one another, than they are of the People; and for that Reason, politically enervate their own Body by the fame effeminate Luxury, by which they corrupt their Subjects. They are impoverished by every Means which can be invented; and they are kept in a perpetual Terror by the Horror of a State-inquisition; there you see a People deprived of all rational Freedom, and tyrannized over by about two Thousand Men; and yet this Body of two Thousand, are so far from enjoying any Liberty by the subjection of the rest, that they are in an infinitely severer

verer State of Slavery, they make themfelves the most degenerate and unhappy of Mankind, for no other purpose than that they may the more effectually contribute to the Misery of an whole Nation. In short, the regular and methodical Proceedings of an Aristocracy, are more intolerable than the very Excesses of Despotism, and in general, much further from any Remedy.

Thus, my Lord, we have purfued Ariflocracy through its whole progress; we have feen the Seeds, the Growth, and the Fruit. It could boaft none of the Advantages of a Despotism, miserable as those Advantages were, and it was overloaded with an Exuberance of Mischief, unknown even to Defpotism itself. In effect, it is no more than a disorderly Tyranny. This Form therefore could be little approved, even in Speculation, by those who were capable of thinking, and could be less borne in Practice by any who were capable of feeling. However, the fruitful Policy of Man was not yet exhausted. He had yet another Farthing-candle to supply the Deficiencies of the Sun. This was the third Form, C 5

known

known by political Writers under the Name of Democracy. Here the People tranfacted all public Bulinels, or the greater Part of it, in their own Persons; their Laws were made by themselves, and upon any Failure of Duty, their Officers were accountable to themselves and to them only. In all appearance they had fecured by this Method the Advantages of Order and good Government, without paying their Liberty for the Purchase. Now, my Lord, we are come to the Master-piece of Grecian Refinement, and Roman Solidity, a popular Government. The earliest and most celebrated Republic of this Model, was that of It was constructed by no less an Artift, than the celebrated Poet and Philofopher, Solon. But no sooner was this political Vessel launched from the Stocks, than it over-fet, even in the Life-time of the Builder. A Tyranny immediately supervened: not by a foreign Conquest, not by Accident, but by the very Nature and Constitution of Democracy. An artful Man became popular, the People had Power in their Hands, and they devolved a confiderable Share

Share of their Power upon their Favourite: and the only Use he made of this Power. was to plunge those who gave it into Slavery. Accident restored their Liberty, and the same good Fortune produced Men of uncommon Abilities and uncommon Virtues amongst them. But these Abilities were fuffered to be of little Service either to their Poffesfors or to the State. of these Men, for whose Sake alone we read their History, they banished; others they imprisoned, and all they treated with various Circumstances of the most shameful Ingratitude. Republics have many Things in the Spirit of absolute Monarchy, but none more than this; a shining Merit is ever hated or suspected in a popular Affembly, as well as in a Court; and all Services done the State, are looked upon as dangerous to the Rulers, whether Sultans or Senators. The Oftracifm at Athens was built upon this Principle. The giddy People, whom we have now under Confideration, being elated with fome Flashes of Success, which they owed to nothing less than any Merit of their own, began to tyrannize over their Equals, who had affociated with them for their common Defence.

Defence. With their Prudence they renounced all Appearance of Justice. They entered into Wars rashly and wantonly. If they were unfuccessful, instead of growing wifer by their Misfortune, they threw the whole Blame of their own Misconduct on the Ministers who had advised, and the Generals who had conducted those Wars: until by degrees they had cut off all who could ferve them in their Councils, or their Battles. If at any time these Wars had an happier Issue, it was no less difficult to deal with them on account of their Pride and Infolence. Furious in their Advertity, tyrannical in their Successes, a Commander had more Trouble to concert his Defence before the People, than to plan the Operations of the Campaign. It was not uncommon for a General, under the horrid Despotism of the Roman Emperors, to be ill received in proportion to the Greatness of his Services. Agricola is a strong Inflance of this. No Man had done greater Things, nor with more honest Ambition. Yet on his Return to Court, he was obliged to enter Rome with all the Secrecy of a Criminal. He went to the Palace, not

like a victorious Commander who had merited and might demand the greatest Rewards, but like an Offender who had come to supplicate a Pardon for his Crimes. His Reception was answerable: " Brevi of-" culo, & nullo sermone exceptus, turba ser-" vientium immistus est." Yet in that worst Season of this worst of monarchical \* Tyrannies, Modesty, Discretion, and a Coolness of Temper, formed some kind of Security, even for the Highest Merit. But at Athens, the nicest and best studied Behaviour was not a sufficient Guard for a Man of great Capacity. Some of their bravest Commanders were obliged to fly their Country, some to enter into the Service of its Enemies, rather than abide a popular Determination of their Conduct. lest, as one of them said, their Giddiness might make the People condemn where they meant to acquit; to throw in a black Bean, even when they intended a white one.

The Arbenians made a very rapid Progress to the most enormous Excesses. The People

<sup>\*</sup> Sciant quibus moris illicita mirari, posse etiam sub malis principibus magnos viros, &c. See 42 to the End of it.

People under no Restraint soon grew diffolute, luxurious, and idle. They renounced all Labour, and began to sublist themselves from the public Revenues. They loft all Concern for their common Honour or Safety, and could bear no Advice that tended to reform them. At this time Truth became offensive to those Lords the People, and most highly dangerous to the Speaker. The Orators no longer afcended the Rostrum, but to corrupt them further with the most fulsome Adulation. These Orators were all bribed by foreign Princes on the one Side or the other. And besides its own Parties, in this City there were Parties and avowed ones too, for the Perhans, Spartans and Macedonians, Supported each of them by one or more Demagogues pensioned and bribed to this iniquitous Service. The People, forgetful of all Virtue and public Spirit, and intoxicated with the Flatteries of their Orators (these Courtiers of Republies, and endowed with the distinguishing Characteristics of all other Courtiers) this People I fay, at last arrived at that Pitch of Madness,

that they coolly and deliberately, by an express Law, made it capital for any Man to propose the Application of the immense Sums squandered in public Shows, to the more necessary Purposes of the State. When you see the People of this Republic banishing or murdering their best and ableft Citizens, dissipating the public Treafure with the most fenseless Extravagance, and spending their whole Time, as Spectators or Actors, in playing, fidling, dancing and finging, does it not, my LORD, strike your Imagination with the Image of a fort of a complex Nero? And does it not strike you with the greater Horror, when you observe, not one Man only, but a whole City, grown drunk with Pride and Power, running with a Rage of Folly into the same mean and senseless Debauchery and Extravagance? But if this People resembled Nero in their Extravagance, much more did they resemble and even exceed him in Cruelty and Injustice. In the Time of Pericles, one of the most celebrated Times in the History of that Commonwealth, a King of Egypt fent them a Donation of Corn. This they were mean enough

enough to accept. And had the Egyptian Prince intended the Ruin of this City of wicked Bedlamites, he could not have taken a more effectual Method to do it. than by such an ensnaring Largess. The Distribution of this Bounty caused a Quarrel; the Majority set on foot an Enquiry into the Title of the Citizens; and upon a vain Pretence of Illegitimacy, newly and occasionally set up, they deprived of their Share of the royal Donation no less than five thousand of their own Body. They went further; they disfranchifed them; and having once begun with an Act of Injustice, they could set no Bounds to it. Not content with cutting them off from the Rights of Citizens, they plundered those unfortunate Wretches of all their Substance; and to crown this Master-piece of Violence and Tyranny, they actually fold every Man of the five thousand as Slaves in the public Market. Observe, my LORD, that the five thousand we here speak of, were cut off from a Body of no more than nineteen thousand; for the entire Number of Citizens was no greater at that Time. Could the Tyrant who wished the Roman People to have had but one Neck; could the Tyrant Caligula himself have done, nay, he could scarcely wish for a greater Mischief, than to have cut off, at one Stroke, a fourth of his People? Or has the Cruelty of that Series of fanguine Tyrants, the Cafars, ever presented such a Piece of flagrant and extensive Wickedness? The whole History of this celebrated Republic is but one Tiffue of Rashness, Folly, Ingratitude, Injustice, Tumult, Violence, and Tyranny, and indeed of every Species of Wekedness that can well be imagined. This was a City of Wifemen, in which a Minister could not exercife his Functions; a warlike People, amongst whom a General did not dare either to gain or loofe a Battle; a learned Nation, in which a Philosopher could not venture on a free Enquiry. This was the City which banished Themistocles, starved Aristides, forced into Exile Miltiades, drove out Anaxagoras, and poisoned Socrates, This was a City which changed the Form of its Government with the Moon; eternal Conspiracies, Revolutions daily, nothing fixed and established. A Republic, as an antient

species of Government, but a Magazine of every Species; here you find every Sort of it, and that in the worst Form. As there is a perpetual Change, one rising and the other falling, you have all the Violence and wicked Policy, by which a beginning Power must always acquire its Strength, and all the Weakness by which falling States are brought to a complete Destruction.

Rome has a more venerable Aspect than Albens: and the conducted her Affairs, fo far as related to the Ruin and Oppression of the greatest Part of the World, with greater Wisdom and more Unisormity. But the domestic Occonomy of these two States was nearly or altogether the same. An internal Diffention constantly tore to Pieces, the Bowels of the Roman Commonwealth. You find the same Confusion, the same Factions which subfifted at Athens, the fame Tumults, the fame Revolutions, and in fine, the same Slavery. If perhaps their former Condition did not deserve that Name altogether as well. All other Republics were of the same Character. Florence was a Transcript of Athens. And the modern Republics, as they approach more or less to the Democratic Form, partake more or less of the Nature of those which I have described.

We are now at the Close of our Review of the three simple Forms of artificial Society, and we have shewn them, however they may differ in Name, or in some slight Circumstances, to be all alike in effect; in effect, to be all Tyrannies. But suppose we were inclined to make the most ample Concessions; let us concede Athens, Rome, Carthage, and two or three more of the antient, and as many of the modern Commonwealths, to have been, or to be free and happy, and to owe their Freedom and Happiness to their political Constitution. Yet allowing all this, what Defence does this make for artificial Society in general, that these inconsiderable Spots of the Globe have for some short Space of Time stood as Exceptions to a Charge fo general? But when we call these Governments free, or concede that their Citizens were happier than those which lived under different Forms.

Forms, it is merely ex abundanti. For we should be greatly mistaken, if we really thought that the Majority of the People which filled these Cities, enjoyed even that nominal political Freedom of which I have spoken so much already. In reality, they had no Part of it. In Atbens there were usually from ten to thirty thousand Freemen: This was the utmost. But the Slaves usually amounted to four hundred thoufand, and sometimes to a great many more. The Freemen of Sparta and Rome were not more numerous in proportion to those whom they held in a Slavery, even more terrible than the Albenian. Therefore flate the Matter fairly: The free States never formed, though they were taken altogether, the thousandth Part of the habitable Globe: the Freemen in these States were never the twentieth Part of the People, and the Time they subsisted is scarce any thing in that immense Ocean of Duration in which Time and Slavery are fo nearly commensurate. Therefore call these free States, or popular Governments, or what you please, when we consider the Majority of their Inhabitants, and regard the natural Rights

Rights of Mankind, they must appear in Reality and Truth, no better than pitiful and oppressive Obligarchies.

After so fair an Examen, wherein nothing has been exaggerated; no Fact produced which cannot be proved, and none which has been produced in any wise forced or strained, while thousands have, for Brevity, been omitted; after so candid a Discussion in all Respects; what Slave so passive, what Bigot so blind, what Enthusiast so stand up in Desence of a System calculated for a Curse to Mankind? A Curse under which they smart and groan to this Hour, without thoroughly knowing the Nature of the Disease, and wanting Understanding or Courage to apply the Remedy.

I need not excuse myself to your Lord-ship, nor, I think, to any honest Man, for the Zeal I have shewn in this Cause; for it is an honest Zeal, and in a good Cause. I have defended Natural Religion against a Consederacy of Atheists and Divines. I now plead for Natural Society against Politicians, and for Natural Reason against all three. When the World is in a fitter Tem-

per than it is at present to hear Truth, or when I shall be more indifferent about its Temper, my Thoughts may become more public. In the mean time, let them repose in my own Bosom, and in the Bosoms of fuch Men as are fit to be initiated in the fober Mysteries of Truth and Reason. My Antagonists have already done as much as I could defire. Parties in Religion and Politics make fufficient Discoveries concerning each other, to give a fober Man a proper Caution against them all. The Monarchic, Ariftocratical, and Popular Partizans have been jointly laying their Axes to the Root of all Government, and have in their Turns proved each other absurd and inconvenient. In vain you tell me that Artificial Government is good, but that I fall out only with the Abuse! Observe, my LORD, I pray you, that grand Error upon which all artificial legislative Power is founded. It was observed, that Men had ungovernable Passions, which made it neceffary to guard against the Violence they might offer to each other. They appointed Governors over them for this Reason; but a worse and more perplexing Difficulty arifes

vernors? Quis custodiet ipsos custodes? In vain they change from a single Person to a Few. These Few have the Passions of the One, and they unite to strengthen themselves, and to secure the Gratification of their lawless Passions at the Expence of the general Good. In vain do we say to the Many. The Case is worse; their Passions are less under the Government of Reason, they are augmented by the Contagion, and defended against all Attacks by their Multitude.

I have purposely avoided the mention of the mixed Form of Government, for Reafons that will be very obvious to your Lordfhip. But my Caution can avail me but little. You will not fail to urge it against me in favour of Political Society. You will not fail to shew how the Errors of the feveral fimple Modes are corrected by a Mixture of all of them, and a proper Balance of the feveral Powers in fuch a State. I confess, my Lord, that this has been long a darling Mistake of my own; and that of all the Sacrifices I have made to Truth, this has been by far the greatest. When I confess that I think this Notion a Mistake,

Mistake, I know to whom I am speaking, for I am satisfied that Reasons are like Liquors, and there are some of such a Nature as none but strong Heads can bear. There are few with whom I can communicate so freely as with Pope. But Pope cannot bear every Truth. He has a Timidity which hinders the full Exertion of his Faculties, almost as effectually as Bigotry cramps those of the general Herd of Man-But whoever is a genuine Follower of Truth, keeps his Eye steady upon his Guide, indifferent whither he is led, provided that she is the Leader. And, my LORD, if it be properly considered, it were infinitely better to remain possessed by the whole Legion of vulgar Mistakes, than to reject some, and at the same time to retain a Fondness for others altogether as abfurd and irrational. The first has at least a Confiftency, that makes a Man, however erroneously, uniform at least; but the latter way of proceeding is such an inconsistent Chimæra and Jumble of Philosophy and vulgar Prejudice, that hardly any thing more ridiculous can be conceived. Let us therefore freely, and without Fear or Prejudice,

judice, examine this last Contrivance of Policy. And without considering how near the Quick our Instruments may come, let us search it to the Bottom.

First then, all Men are agreed, that this Junction of Regal, Aristocratic, and Popular Power, must form a very complex, nice, and intricate Machine, which being composed of such a Variety of Parts, with fuch opposite Tendencies and Movements. it must be liable on every Accident to be disordered. To speak without Metaphor, fuch a Government must be liable to frequent Cabals, Tumults, and Revolutions, from its very Constitution. These are undoubtedly as ill Effects, as can happen in a Society; for in such a Case, the Closeness acquired by Community, instead of ferving for mutual Defence, ferves only to increase the Danger. Such a System is like a City, where Trades that require conftant Fires are much exercised, where the Houses are built of combustible Materials, and where they fland extremely close.

In the second Place, the several constituent Parts having their distinct Rights, and these many of them so necessary to be determined

termined with Exactness, are yet to indeterminate in their Nature, that it becomes a new and constant Source of Debate and Confusion. Hence it is, that whilft the Business of Government should be carrying on, the Question is, who has a Right to exercise this or that Function of it, or what Men have Power to keep their Offices in any Function. Whilft this Contest continues, and whilft the Balance in any fort continues, it has never any Remission; all manner of Abuses and Villanies in Officers remain unpunished, the greatest Frauds and Robberics in the public Revenues are committed in Defiance of Justice; and Abuses grow, by Time and Impunity, into Customs; until they prescribe against the Laws, and grow too inveterate often to admit a Cure, unless such as may be as bad increase the Danger. Sach Basini

Thirdly, the feveral Parts of this Species of Government, though united, preferve the Spirit which each Form has separately. Kings are ambitious; the Nobility haughty; and the Populace tumultuous and ungovernable. Each Party, however in Appearance peaceable, carries on a Delign

upon the others; and it is owing to this, that in all Questions, whether concerning foreign or domestic Affairs, the Whole generally turns more upon fome Party-Matter than upon the Nature of the Thing itself; whether such a Step will diminish or augment the Power of the Crown, or how far the Privileges of the Subject are like to be extended or restricted by it. And these Questions are constantly resolved, without any Consideration of the Merits of the Cause, merely as the Parties who uphold these jarring Interests may chance to prevail; and as they prevail, the Balance is overset, now upon one side, now upon the other. The Government is one Day, arbitrary Power in a fingle Person: another, a juggling Confederacy of a few to cheat the Prince and enflave the People: and the third, a frantic and unmanageable Democracy. The great Instrument in all these Changes, and what infuses a peculiar Venom into all of them, is Party. It is of no Consequence what the Principles of any Party, or what their Pretentions are; the Spirit which actuates all Parties is the fame: the Spirit of Ambition, of Self-Interest, of D 2

Oppression, and Treachery. This Spirit entirely reverfes all the Principles which a benevolent Nature has erected within us; all Honesty, all equal Justice, and even the Ties of natural Society, the natural Affections. In a word, my LORD, we have all feen, and if any outward Considerations were worthy the lasting Concern of a wife Man, we have some of us felt, such Oppresfion from Party Government as no other Tyranny can parallel. We behold daily the most important Rights, Rights upon which all the others depend, we behold these Rights determined in the last Resort, without the least Attention even to the Appearance or Colour of Justice; we behold this without Emotion, because we have grown up in the conftant View of such Practices; and we are not furprized to hear a Man requested to be a Knave and a Traitor, with as much Indifference, as if the most ordinary Favour were asked; and we hear this Request refused, not because it is a most unjust and unreasonable Desire, but that this Worthy has already engaged his Injustice to another. These and many more Points I am far from spreading to their

their full Extent. You are fenfible that I do not put forth half my Strength; and you cannot be at a Loss for the Reason. A Man is allowed sufficient Freedom of Thought, provided he knows how to chuse his Subject properly. You may criticife freely upon the Chinese Constitution, and observe with as much Severity as you please upon the absurd Tricks, or destructive Bigotry of the Bonzees. But the Scene is changed as you come homeward, and Atheism or Treason may be the Names given in Britain, to what would be Reafon and Truth if afferted of China, I fubmit to the Condition, and though I have a notorious Advantage before me, I wave the Pursuit. For else, my LORD, it is very obvious what a Picture might be drawn of the Excesses of Party even in our own Nation. I could flew, that the fame Faction has in one Reign promoted popular Seditions, and in the next been a Patron of Tyranny; I could shew, that they have all of them betrayed the public Safety at all Times, and have very frequently with equal Perfidy made a Market of their own Cause, and their own Associates. I could hew D 3

fhew how vehemently they have contended for Names, and how filently they have paffed over Things of the last Importance. And I could demonstrate, that they have had the Opportunity of doing all this Mifchief, nay, that they themselves had their Origin and Growth from that complex Form of Government which we are wifely taught to look upon as fo great a Bleffing. Revolve, my LORD, our History from the Conquest. We scarce ever had a Prince, who by Fraud, or Violence, had not made some Infringement on the Constitution. We scarce ever had a Parliament which knew, when it attempted to fet Limits to the Royal Authority, how to fet Limits to its own. Evils we have had continually calling for Reformation, and Reformations more grievous than any Evils. Our boafted Liberty fometimes trodden down, fometimes giddily fet up, and ever precarioufly fluctuating and unfettled; it has been only kept alive by the Blasts of continual Feuds, Wars, and Conspiracies. In no Country in Europe has the Scaffold so often blushed with the Blood of its Nobility. Confiscations, Banishments, Attainders, Executions, make a large Part of the History of such of our Families as are not utterly extinguished by them. Formerly indeed Things had a more ferocious Appearance than they have at this Day. In these early and unrefined Ages, the jarring Parts of a certain chaotic Constitution supported their several Pretentions by the Sword. Experience and Policy have since taught other Methods.

Res vero nunc agitur tenui pulmone rubetæ.

But how far Corruption, Venality, the Contempt of Honour, the Oblivion of all Duty to our Country, and the most abandoned public Prostitution, are preserable to the more glaring and violent Effects of Faction, I will not presume to determine. Sure I am that they are very great Evils.

I have done with the Forms of Government. During the Course of my Enquiry you may have observed a very material Difference between my Manner of Reasoning and that which is in Use amongst the Abettors of artificial Society. They form their Plans upon what seems most eligible

ores as a Remedy for The Evil. By thefe

to their Imaginations, for the ordering of Mankind. I discover the Mistakes in those Plans, from the real known Confequences which have refulted from them. have inlifted Reason to fight against itself, and employ its whole Force to prove that it is an insufficient Guide to them in the Conduct of their Lives. But unhappily for us, in proportion as we have deviated from the plain Rule of our Nature, and turned our Reason against itself, in that Proportion have we increased the Follies and Miseries of Mankind. The more deeply we penetrate into the Labyrinth of Art, the further we find ourselves from those Ends for which we entered it. This has happened in almost every Species of Artificial Society, and in all Times. We found, or we thought we found, an Inconvenience in having every Man the Judge of his own Cause. Therefore Judges were set up, at first with discretionary Powers. But it was foon found a miserable Slavery to have our Lives and Properties precarious, and hanging upon the arbitrary Determination of any one Man, or Set of Men. We flew to Laws as a Remedy for this Evil. By these

we perfuaded ourselves we might know with some Certainty upon what Ground we flood. But lo! Differences arose upon the Sense and Interpretation of these Laws. Thus we were brought back to our old Incertifude. New Laws were made to expound the old; and new Difficulties arose upon the new Laws: as Words multiplied. Opportunities of cavilling upon them multiplied also. Then Recourse was had to Notes, Comments, Glosses, Reports, Refponsa Prudentum, learned Readings: Eagle flood against Eagle: Authority was set up against Authority. Some were allured by the modern, others reverenced the antient: The new were more enlightened, the old were more venerable. Some adopted the Comment, others fluck to the Text. The Confusion increased, the Mist thickened. until it could be discovered no longer what was allowed or forbidden, what Things were in Property, and what common. In this Uncertainty, (uncertain even to the Professors, an Egyptian Darkness to the rest of Mankind) the contending Parties . felt themselves more effectually ruined by the Delay than they could have been by

D 5 5

the

the Injustice of any Decision. Our Inheritances are become a Prize for Disputation; and Disputes and Litigations are become an Inheritance.

The Profesiors of artificial Law have always walked hand in hand with the Profesfors of Artificial Theology. As their End, in confounding the Reason of Man, and abridging his natural Freedom, is exactly the same, they have adjusted the Means to that End in a Way entirely similar. The Divine thunders out his Anathemas with more Noise and Terror against the Breach of one of his politive Institutions, or the Neglect of some of his trivial Forms, than against the Neglect or Breach of those Duties and Commandments of natural Religion, which by these Forms and Institutions he pretends to enforce. The Lawyer has his Forms, and his politive Institutions too, and he adheres to them with a Veneration altogether as religious. The worst Cause cannot be so prejudicial to the Litigant, as his Advocate's or Attorney's Ignorance or Neglect of these Forms. A Law-fuit is like an ill-managed Dispute, in which the first Object is soon

out

out of Sight, and the Parties end upon a Matter wholly foreign to that on which In a Law-suit the Question they began. is, who has a Right to a certain House or Farm? And this Question is daily determined, not upon the Evidences of the Right, but upon the Observance or Neglect of some Forms of Words in use with the Gentlemen of the Robe, about which there is even amongst themselves such a Disagreement, that the most experienced Veterans in the Profession can never be positively affured that they are not mistaken.

Let us expostulate with these learned Sages, these Priests of the sacred Temple of Justice. Are we Judges of our own Property? By no means. You then, who are initiated into the Mysteries of the blindfold Goddess, inform me, whether I have a Right to eat the Bread I have earned by the Hazard of my Life, or the Sweat of my Brow? The grave Doctor answers me in the Affirmative. The reverend Serjeant replies in the Negative; the learned Barrifter reasons upon one Side and upon the other, and concludes nothing. What shall I do? An Antagonist starts up and preffes

presses me hard. I enter the Field, and retain these three Persons to defend my Cause. My Cause which two Farmers from the Plough could have decided in half an Hour, takes the Court twenty Years, I am however at the end of my Labour, and have in Reward for all my Toil and Vexation, a Judgment in my Favour. But hold - a fagacious Commander, in the Adversary's Army has found a Flaw in the Proceeding. My triumph is turned into Mourning. I have used or, instead of and, or some Mistake, small in Appearance, but dreadful in its Consequences, and have the whole of my Success quashed in a Writ of Error. I remove my Suit; I shift from Court to Court; I sly from Equity to Law, and from Law to Equity; equal Uncertainty attends me every where: And a Mistake in which I had no Share, decides at once upon my Liberty and Property, sending me from the Court to a Prison, and adjudging my Family to Beggary and Famine. I am innocent, Gentlemen, of the Darkness and Uncertainty of your Science. I never darkened it with abfurd and contradictory Notions,

sophistry. You have excluded me from any Share in the Conduct of my own Cause; the Science was too deep for me; I acknowledged it; but it was too deep even for yourselves: You have made the way so intricate, that you are yourselves lost in it: You err, and you punish me for your Errors.

The Delay of the Law is, your Lordship will tell me, a trite Topic, and which of its abuses have not been too severely felt not to be often complained of? A Man's Property is to serve for the Purpofes of his Support; and therefore to delay a Determination concerning that, is the worst Injustice because it cuts off the very End and Purpole for which I applied to the Tudica ure for Relief. Quite contrary in Case of a Man's Life, there the Determination can hardly be too much protracted. Mistakes in this Case are as often fallen into as in any other, and if the judgment be sudden, the Mistakes are the most irretrievable of all others. Of this the Gentlemen of the Robe are themselves sensible,

and they have brought it into a Maxim. De morte bominis nulla est cunctatio longa. But what could have induced men to reverse the Rules and to contradict that Reafon which dictated them, I am utterly unable to guess. A Point concerning Property, which ought, for the Reasons I just mentioned, to be most speedily decided, frequently exercises the Wit of Successions of Lawyers, for many Generations. Multa virûm volvens durando sæcula vincit. But the Question concerning a Man's Life, that great Question in which no Delay ought to be counted tedious, is commonly. determined in twenty-four Hours at the utmost. It is not to be wondered at, that Injustice and Absurdity should be inseparable Companions.

Ask of Politicians the End for which Laws were originally designed; and they will answer, that the Laws were designed as a Protection for the Poor and Weak, against the Oppression of the Rich and Powerful. But surely no Pretence can be so ridiculous; a Man might as well tell me he has taken off my Load, because he has changed the Burthen. If the Poor Man be

not able to support his Suit, according to the vexatious and expensive manner established in civilized Countries, has not the Rich as great an Advantage over him as the Strong has over the Weak in a State of Nature? But we will not place the State of Nature, which is the Reign of God, in competition with Political Society, which is the absurd Usurpation of Man. In a State of Nature, it is true, that a Man of superior Force may beat or rob me; but then it is true, that I am at full Liberty to defend myself, or make Reprisal by Surprize or by Cunning, or by any other way in which I may be superior to him. But in Political Society, a rich Man may rob me in another way. I cannot defend myfelf; for Money is the only weapon with which we are allowed to fight. And if I attempt to avenge myself, the whole Force of that Society is ready to complete my Ruin.

A good Parson once said, that where Mystery begins, Religion ends, Cannot I say, as truly at least, of human Laws, that where Mystery begins, Justice ends? It is hard to say

fay, whether the Doctors of Law or Divinity have made the greater Advances in the lucrative Business of Mystery. Lawyers, as well as the Theologians, have erected another Reason besides Natural Reason; and the Result has been, another Justice besides natural Justice. They have so bewildered the World and themselves in unmeaning Forms and Ceremonies, and fo perplexed the plainest Matters with metaphysical Jargon, that it carries the highest Danger to a Man out of that Profession, to make the leaft Step without their Advice . and Affiftance. Thus by confining to themselves the Knowledge of the Foundation of all Mens Lives and Properties, they have reduced all Mankind into the most abject and fervile Dependence. We are Tenants at the will of these Gentlemen for every thing; and a metaphylical Quibble is to decide whether the greatest Villain breathing shall meet his Deserts, or escape with Impunity, or whether the best Man in the Society shall not be reduced to the lowest and most despicable Condition it affords. In a word, my Lord, the Injustice, Delay, Puerility, false Refinement,

ment, and affected Mystery of the Law are such, that many who live under it come to admire and envy the Expedition, Simplicity, and Equality of arbitrary Judgments. I need insist the less on this Article to your Lordship, as you have frequently lamented the Miseries derived to us from Artiscial Law, and your Candor is the more to be admired and applauded in this, as your Lordship's noble House has derived its Wealth and its Honours from that Profession.

Before we finish our Examination of Artificial Society, I shall lead your Lordship into a closer Consideration of the Relations which it gives Birth to, and the Benefits, if such they are, which result from these Relations. The most obvious Division of Society is, into Rich and Poor; and it is no less obvious, that the Number of the former bear a great Disproportion to those of the latter. The whole Business of the Poor is to administer to the Idleness, Folly, and Luxury of the Rich; and that of the Rich, in return, is to find the best Methods of confirming the Slavery and increasing

the Burthers of the Poor. In a State of Nature, it is an invariable Law, that a Man's Acquisitions are in preportion to his Labours. In a State of Artificial Society. it is a Law as conftant and invariable, that those who labour most enjoy the fewest Things; and that those who labour not. at all, have the greatest Number of Enjoyments. A Constitution of Things this, strange and ridiculous beyond Expression. We scarce believe a thing when we are told it, which we actually see before our Eyes every Day without being in the least furprized. I suppose that there are in Great Britain upwards of an hundred thoufand People employed in Lead, Tin, Iron, Copper, and Coal Mines, these unhappy Wretches scarce ever see the Light of the Sun; they are buried in the Bowels of the Earth; there they work at a severe and dismal Task, without the least Prospect of being delivered from it; they subfift upon the coarfest and worst fort of Fare; they have their Health miserably impaired, and their Lives cut short, by being perpetually confined in the close Vapour of these malignant Minerals. An hundred thousand more

more at least are tortured without Remission by the suffocating Smoak, intense Fires, and constant Drudgery necessary in refining and managing the Products of those Mines. If any Man informed us that two hundred thousand innocent Perfons were condemned to fo intolerable Slavery, how should we pity the unhappy Sufferers, and how great would be our just Indignation against those who inflicted so cruel and ignominious a Punishment? This is an Inflance, I could not wish a stronger, of the numberless Things which we pass by in their common Dress, yet which shock us when they are nakedly represented. But this Number, considerable as it is, and the Slavery, with all its Baseness and Horror, which we have at home, is nothing to what the rest of the World affords of the fame Nature. Millions daily bathed in the poisoned Damps and destructive Effluvia of Lead, Silver, Copper, and Arfenic. To fay nothing of those other Employments, those Stations of Wretchedness and Contempt in which Civil Society has placed the numerous Enfans perdus of her Army. Would any rational Man submit to one of the

the most tolerable of these Drudgeries, for all the artificial Enjoyments which Policy. has made to refult from them? By no means, And yet need I suggest to your Lordship. that those who find the Means, and those who arrive at the end, are not at all the fame Persons. On considering the strange and unaccountable Fancies and Contrivances of artificial Reason, I have somewhere called this Earth the Bedlam of our System. Looking now upon the Effects of some of those Fancies, may we not with equal Reason call it likewise the Newgate, and the Bridewell of the Universe. Indeed the Blindness of one Part of Mankind co-operating with the Frenzy and Villainy of the other, has been the real Builder of this refpectable Fabric of political Society: And as the Blindness of Mankind has caused their Slavery, in Return their State of Slavery is made a pretence for continuing them in a State of Blindness; for the Politician will tell you gravely, that their Life of Servitude disqualifies the greater Part of the Race of Man for a Search of Truth, and supplies them with no other than mean and infufficient Ideas. This is but too

true; and this is one of the Reasons for which I blame such Institutions.

In a Misery of this Sort, admitting some few Lenities, and those too but a few, nine Parts in ten of the whole Race of Mankind drudge through Life. It may be urged perhaps, in Palliation of this, that, at least, the rich Few find a considerable and real Benefit from the Wretchedness of the Many. But is this fo in Fact? Let us examine the Point with a little more Attention. For this Purpose the Rich in all Societies may be thrown into two Classes. The first is of those who are Powerful as well as Rich, and conduct the Operations of the vast political Machine. The other is of those who employ their Riches wholly in the Acquisition of Pleasure. As to the first Sort, their continual Care, and Anxiety, their toilsome Days, and sleeples Nights, are next to proverbial. These Circumstances are fufficient almost to level their Condition to that of the unhappy Majority: but there are other Circumstances which place them in a far lower Condition. Not only their Understandings labour continually, which is the severest Labour, but their Hearts

Hearts are torn by the worst, most troublefome, and infatiable of all Passions, by Avarice, by Ambition, by Fear and Jealoufy. No Part of the Mind has Reft. Power gradually extirpates from the Mind every humane and gentle Virtue. Pity, Benevolence, Friendship, are Things almost unknown in high Stations. Vera amicitiæ rarissime inveniuntur in iis qui in bonoribus reque publica versantur, says Cicero. And indeed Courts are the Schools where Cruelty, Pride, Dissimulation and Treachery are fludied and taught in the most vicious Perfection. This is a Point fo clear and acknowledged, that if it did not make a necessary part of my Subject, I should pass it by entirely. And this has hindered me from drawing at full Length, and in the most striking Colours, this shocking Picture of the Degeneracy and Wretchedness of human Nature, in that Part which is vulgarly thought its happiest and most amiable State. You know from what Originals I could copy such Pictures. Happy are they who know enough of them to know the little Value of the Poffesfors of fuch Things, and of all that they poffeis; and happy they who have been fnatched from

from that Post of Danger which they occupy, with the Remains of their Virtue; Loss of Honours, Wealth, Titles, and even the Loss of one's Country, is nothing in Balance with so great an Advantage.

Let us now view the other Species of the Rich, those who devote their Time and Fortunes to Idleness and Pleasure. How much happier are they? The Pleafures which are agreeable to Nature are within the Reach of all, and therefore can form no Diffinction in favour of the Rich. The Pleasures which Art forces up are seldom fincere, and never fatisfying. What is worse, this constant Application to pleafure takes away from the Enjoyment, or rather turns it into the Nature of a very burthensome and laboroius Bufiness. It has Consequences much more fatal. It produces a weak valetudinary State of Body, attended by all those horrid Disorders, and yet more horrid Methods of Cure, which are the Refult of Luxury on one hand, and the weak and ridiculous Efforts of human Art on the other. The pleasures of fuch Men are scarcely felt as pleasures; at

citatin ii.

the same time that they bring on pains and Diseases, which are felt but too severely. The Mind has its Share of the Misfortune; it grows lazy and enervate, unwilling and unable to fearch for Truth, and utterly uncapable of knowing, much less of relishing real Happiness. The poor by their excessive Labour, and the Rich by their enormous Luxury, are fet upon a Level. and rendered equally ignorant of any Knowledge which might conduce to their Happiness. A dismal View of the Interior of all Civil Society. The lower part broken and ground down by the most cruel Oppression; and the Rich by their artificial Method of Life bringing worse Evils on themselves, than their Tyranny could posfibly inflict on those below them. Very different is the prospect of the Natural State. Here there are no Wants which Nature gives, and in this State Men can be sensible of no other Wants, which are not to be supplied by a very moderate Degree of Labour; therefore there is no Slavery. Neither is there any Luxury, because no single Man can supply the Materials of it. Life is simple and therefore it is happy.

I am conscious, my Lord, that your Politician will urge in his Defence, that this unequal State is highly useful. That without dooming some Part of Mankind to extraordinary Toil, the Arts which cultivate Life could not be exercised. But I demand of this Politician, how fuch Arts came to be necessary? He answers, that Civil Society could not well exist without them. So that these Arts are necessary to Civil Society, and Civil Society necessary again to these Arts. Thus running in a Circle, without Modesty, and without End, and making one Error and Extravagance an Excuse for the other. My Sentiments about these Arts and their Cause, I have often discoursed with my Friends at large. Pope has expressed them in good Verse, where he talks with fo much Force of Reafon and Elegance of Language in Praise of the State of Nature:

Then was not Pride, nor Arts that Pride to aid,

Man walk'd with Beast, Joint-tenant of the Shade.

E

On the whole, my LORD, if Political Society, in whatever Form, has still made the Many the Property of the Few; if it has introduced Labours unnecellary, Vices and Diseases unknown, and Pleasures incompatible with Nature; if in all Countries it abridges the Lives of Millions, and renders those of Millions more utterly abject and miserable, shall we still worship fo destructive an Idol, and daily sacrifice to it our Health, our Liberty, and our Peace? Or shall we pass by this monstrous Heap of absurd Notions, and abominable Practices, thinking we have sufficiently discharged our Duty in exposing the trifling Cheats, and ridiculous Juggles of a few mad, defigning, or ambitious Priefts? Alas! my Lord, we labour under a mortal Confumption, whilft we are so anxious about the Cure of a fore Finger. For has not this Leviathan of Civil Power overflowed the Earth with a Deluge of Blood, as if he were made to disport and play therein?

We have shewn, that Political Society, on a moderate Calculation, has been the Means of murdering several times the Number of Inhabitants now upon the Earth.

Earth, during its short Existence, not upwards of four thousand Years in any Accounts to be depended on. But we have faid nothing of the other, and perhaps as bad a Confequence of these Wars, which have spilled such Seas of Blood, and reduced so many Millions to a merciles Slavery. But these are only the Ceremonies performed in the Porch of the political Temple. Much more horrid ones are seen as you enter it. The several Species of Government vie with each other in the Absurdity of their Constitutions, and the Oppression which they make their Subjects endure. Take them under what Form you please, they are in Effect but a Despotism, and they fall, both in Effect and Appearance too, after a very short Period, into that cruel and detestable Species of Tyranny; which I rather call it, because we have been Educated under another Form, than that this is of worse Consequences to Mankind. For the free Governments, for the Point of their Space, and the Moment of their Duration, have felt more Confusion, and committed more flagrant Acts of Tyranny, than the most perfect despotic E 2 Govern-

Governments which we have ever known. Turn your Eye next to the Labyrinth of the Law, and the Iniquity conceived in its intricate Recesses. Consider the Ravages committed in the Bowels of all Commonwealths by Ambition, by Avarice, Envy, Fraud, open Injustice, and pretended Friendship; Vices which could draw little Support from a State of Nature, but which bloffom and flourish in the Rankness of political Society. Revolve our whole Discourse; add to it all those Reflections which your own good Understanding shall suggest, and make a strenuous Effort beyond the Reach of vulgar Philosophy, to confess that the Cause of Artificial Society is more defenceless even than that of Artificial Religion; that it is as derogatory from the Honour of the Creator, as subversive of human Reason, and productive of infinitely more Mischief, to the human Race.

Wars where they were opposed, and Slavery where they were received, the pretended wise Inventions of Politicians have done the same. But the Slavery has been much

much heavier, the Wars far more bloody, and both more universal by many Degrees. Shew me any Mischief produced by the Madness or Wickedness of Theologians, and I will shew you an hundred, resulting from the Ambition and Villainy of Conquerors and Statesmen. Shew me an Abfurdity in Religion, I will undertake to shew you an hundred for one in political Laws and Institutions. If you fay, that Natural Religion is a sufficient Guide without the foreign Aid of Revelation, on what Principle should Political Laws become neceffary? Is not the fame Reason available in Theology and in Politics ? If the Laws of Nature are the Laws of God, is it confiftent with the Divine Wisdom to prescribe Rules to us, and leave the Enforcement of them to the Folly of human Inftitutions? Will you follow Truth but to a certain Point ?.

We are indebted for all our Mileries to our Distrust of that Guide, which Providence thought sufficient for our Condition, our own natural Reason, which rejecting, both in human and divine Things, we have given our Necks to the Yoke

of political and theological Slavery. We have renounced the Prerogative of Man, and it is no Wonder that we should be treated like Beafts. But our Misery is much greater than theirs, as the Crime we commit in rejecting the lawful Dominion of our Reason is greater than any which they can commit. If after all, you should confess all these Things, yet plead the Necessity of political Institutions, weak and wicked as they are, I can argue with equal, perhaps superior Force concerning the Necessity of artificial Religion; and every Step you advance in your Argument, you add a Strength to mine. So that if we are refolved to submit our Reason and our Liberty to civil Usurpation, we have nothing to do but to conform as quietly as we can to the vulgar Notions which are connected with this, and take up the Theology of the Vulgar as well as their Politics. But if we think this Necessity rather imaginary than real, we should renounce their Dreams of Society, together with their Visions of Religion, and vindicate ourselves into persect Liberty.

You are, my LORD, but just entering into the World; I am going out of it, I have played long enough to be heartily tired of the Drama. Whether I have acted my Part in it, well or ill, Posterity will judge with more Candor than I, or than the present Age, with our present Passions, can possibly pretend to. For my part, I quit it without a Sigh, and submit to the Sovereign Order without murmuring. The nearer we approach to the Goal of Life, the better we begin to understand the true Value of our Existence, and the real Weight of our Opinions. We fet out much in love with both; but we leave much behind us as we advance. We first throw away the Tales along with the Rattles of our Nurses; those of the Priest keep their Hold a little longer; those of our Governors the longest of all. But the Passions which prop these Opinions are withdrawn one after another; and the cool Light of Reason at the Setting of our Life, shews us what a false Splendor played upon these Objects during our more sanguine Seasons. Happy, my Lord, if instructed by

## [ 94 ]

by my Experience, and even by my Errors, you come early to make such an Estimate of Things, as may give Freedom and Ease to your Life. I am happy that such an Estimate promises me Comfort at my Death.



FINIS.

NEW BOOKS, Printed and Sold by SARAH COTTER, in Skinner-Row.

[Price neatly bound, Six British Shillings.—Printed Page for Page with the London Edition.]

A REPORT of some Proceedings on the Commission of Oyer and Terminer and Goal Delivery, for the Trial of the Rebels in the Year 1746, in the County of Surry, and of other Crown Cases. To which are added, Discourses upon a few Branches of the Crown Law. By Sir Mi-

CHAEL FOSTER, Knt.

"The Subject of this Book is equally useful to the Law-Student, and entertaining to the Scholar The Reports and Cases are stated or Gentleman. with great Clearness and Brevity; and the judicious Compiler's Observations such as evince his Knowledge of the Crown-Law, and profound Reflection. The Discourses annexed to the Reports especially, demonstrate a Fund of good Sense and Knowledge; and the Remarks on some Passages in the History of the Crown Pleas, by the justly esteemed Lord Chief Justice HALE, are such as ought to be carefully perused by all who have been seduced into Notions unfavourable to the Principles of the present happy Establishment, by the Authority of so great a Writer and Lawyer.

"We cannot sufficiently recommend the learned Author's Discourses on High Treason, Manflaughter, Accomplices in Treason, or Aiders and Abettors in Felony, as opening all the Sources of Common and Statute Law, of the Laws of Nature,

Principles of Morality and found Reason.

"With Respect to the Utility of the Subject, he observes justly and modestly in his Presace, that

## BOOKS Published by SARAH COTTER.

character in the Profession, of what their own-Reading and Experience may have suggested; and, at the same Time, to lead young Gentlemen into a right Method of arranging their Ideas, and reducing what they read or hear to the well known. Principles of Law and sound Policy. We acknowledge ourselves throughout the Whole to have been much entertained and instructed in the Perusal, many of the Reports and Cases being of such a Nature, as cannot but strongly interest the Passions."

Dedicated to the King. Elements of Criticism, by the Honourable Henry Home, Lord Kaims, 2 vols.

N. B. This Work treats of the fine Arts, and attempts to form a Standard of Tafte, by unfolding those Principles that ought to govern the Taite of every Individual.

A General History of Feudal Property in GreatBritain, under the following Heads, 1st, History of
the Introduction of the Feudal System into GreatBritain, 2d, History of Tenures, 3d, History of
the Alienation of Land-Property, 4th, History of
Entails, 5th, History of the Laws of Succession
or Descent, 6th, History of the Forms of Conveyance, 7th, History of Jurisdiction and the Forms
of Procedure in Courts, 8th, History of the Constitution of Parliament. Dedicated to the Honourable Henry Home, Lord Kaims, by John Dalrymple, Esq; in one Vol. Octavo,

O 4 10 ½

Webb

## BOOKS Published by SARAH COTTER.

Webb on the Beauties of Poetry and Painting, and an Enquiry into the Merits of the most Celebrated Painters, Antient and Modern, 0 28 1

Voltaire's Universal History, from the Reign of Charlemaign to the Age of Lewis the 14th, in 4 Vols.

Memoirs of Madam de Maintenon and of the last Age, in three vols. — 0 8 1 1

Reports, of Cases and Matters in Law, resolved and adjudged in the Kings Courts in Ireland; collected and digested by Sir John Davies, Knight, the King's Attorney General in that Kingdom. Now first translated into English.

N. B. The Reports of that eminent Lawyer Sir John Davies, having been well received in West-minster-Hall, and containing many curious Points relative to the Laws, History, and Antiquities of this Kingdom, it is hoped, that a Translation of them, out of the Jargon in which they have hitherto appeared, may not be unacceptable, as well to the Gentlemen of the Profession as to others curious in such Matters.

The Life of the Reverend Jonathan Swift, Dean of St. Patrick's, Dublin. By John Hawksworth, Author of the Adventurer, — 0 1 7 ½

Two Treatises of Government, in the Former, the Principles and Foundation of Sir Robert Filmer and his followers are detected and overthrown.

## BOOKS Published by SARAH COTTER.

The Latter an Essay concerning the true Original extent and End of Civil Government. By John Locke, — 0 3 3

Poems by Eminent Ladies, to which is prefixed, A short Account of each Writer, 2 vols. 0 4 4

The History of the Reign of the Emperor Charles the 5th, with a view of the Progress of Society in Europe, from the subversion of the Roman Empire, to the beginning of the 16th Century, 3 Vols.

Hume's History of England, 11 vols. 296

Emilius and Sophia; or an Essay on Education. By John James Rousseau, Citizen of Geneva. Translated from the French, 2 vols. Sewed in Blue Paper, 5s 5d. Neatly bound, 6s 6d.

The Chinese Spy; or Emissary from the Court of Pekin, commissioned to examine into the Prefent State of Europe, 6 vols. bound in three 8s 1 1/2

The Beauties of the Spectators, Tatlers, and Guardians, Collected and Digested under Alphabetical Heads, in two vols.

A Great Variety of Approved Law-Books—Books in most Languages and Faculties, and Stationary Ware of all Kinds, sold by SARAH COTTER, at her Shop under Dick's Coffee-house in Skinner-Row; by whom all Manner of Printing Work is done, with Accuracy and Expedition.



